

# First Things First

## Hebrews 10:7

'Then I said, 'Behold, I have come in the volume of the book it is written of Me to do Your will, O God.'"

The correct study of The Word of God is of paramount importance to walking in the fulness of what Jesus has for us as believers and keeping us anchored in the truth in a world full of lies. There are so many opinions in this world that unless you have a sure foundation in truth, it is very easy to be come persuaded by the spirit of the age.

In this years course's we will be laying down solid biblical understanding and foundations, as well as unveiling Christ hidden and revealed throughout the whole counsel of God's Word. We will also be looking at some of the six covenants found throughout scripture and unpacking the application of the truths found within them.

We will be using some terms throughout the year that are technical in nature but helpful in their application and appropriation. But the undergirding principle of this course is to not make you theologians per se but disciples established in their Kings Word.

Here is a an explanation of these terms:

## Hermeneutics

The Interpretation and study of God's Word. Untying, solving a problem, expounding an idea thoroughly.

## Law of First Mention

Whenever something is introduced in scripture for the first time this becomes not only the precedent but also lays out governing and foundational principles for how we approach that subject throughout out the rest of The Scriptures.

## Type and Shadow

"The New is in the Old contained; The Old is by the New explained."

This is where a portion of Scripture contains a prophetic foreshadow of the coming messiah, Jesus, and truths that are found in His Personhood, and The New Covenant.



# Matthew



# Matthew Overview

## **The Beginning**

**Ch 1-4**

Genealogy  
The Birth of Jesus  
Egypt  
Baptism and Temptation

## **Galilean Ministry**

**Ch 5-18**

The Sermon on The Mount  
Miracles and Parables  
Rejection  
Transfiguration

## **Judea and The Passion**

**Ch 19-28**

The Triumphal Entry  
Death and Resurrection  
The Great Commission



## **Week One**

The Lion Of The Tribe Of Judah	9
The Ministry of Jesus Begins	19

## **Week Two**

The Upside-down Kingdom	31
Apostles and Servants	43

## **Week Three**

Parables and The Kingdom	55
The Christ	65

## **Week Four**

Offenses and Greatness	75
Hosanna	83

## **Week Five**

The Signs of The Times	91
It is Finished	101





# Matthew: Week One

## Session One

### The Lion Of The Tribe Of Judah

So here we are the beginning of The New Testament as we begin with The Gospel of Matthew. As where the Old Testament finishes with many unfulfilled prophecies and Covenants still in play that need their ultimate fulfilling, the first book of The New Testament (Matthew) reveals Jesus as the fulfillment of those prophecies, Covenants and deep longings of the hearts of Israel.

Now Matthews Gospel is directed specifically towards a Jewish audience (thats why the we find then genealogy at the start of Matthew begins with tracing Jesus lineage back to Abraham who was the first Jew as as to show His legal standing in the line of David) as his focus was on revealing and showing Jesus as the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the long awaited and promised messiah of Israel and Matthew uses more Old Testament references than any other Gospel, sixty of them, to reinforce this truth.

He records the life and ministry of Jesus giving special emphasis to specific prophecies that Jesus fulfilled from the Old Testament as a focus on Jesus credentials that He is The Promised One that Israel was waiting for. He show us the importance of Bible Prophecy being exact as:

“The Bible is the only book that hangs its entire credibility on its ability to write history in advance, without error.”

**Dr Chuck Missler**

Matthews Gospel features ten parables not found in any other Gospel, and makes frequent use of the term 'Kingdom of Heaven' as opposed to 'Kingdom of God' as to his Jewish audience using the name of God was a serious matter and one that could get you charged with blasphemy under their traditions. Matthew has the most detailed account of Jesus most famous sermon 'The Sermon On The Mount' that we have in Scripture. He also brings an emphasis to the higher standard of The New Covenant that we as believers will be invited into that Jesus has come to initiate and give to those who will receive Him.

It begins with a genealogy, moves on to the Birth of Jesus, follows His Life and Ministry throughout three and half years and it all culminates with the Death and Resurrection of Christ. So let's begin.

## Advent

### 1 Thessalonians 5:23

'Now may the God of peace Himself sanctify you completely; and may your whole spirit, soul, and body be preserved blameless at the **coming** of our Lord Jesus Christ.'

### παρουσία

Strong's G3952

parousía, par-oo-see'-ah; from the present participle of G3918; a being near, i.e. advent (often, return; specially, of Christ to punish Jerusalem, or finally the wicked); (by implication) physically, aspect:—coming, presence.

-the coming, arrival, advent. The future visible return from heaven of Jesus, to raise the dead, hold the last judgment, and set up formally and gloriously the kingdom of God.

### -What is Advent?

So before we get into Matthew let's have a look at this unique word that the church uses for the season leading up to Jesus's Birth (you know those calendars with chocolates that help to count down the days before Christmas). We think of advent being Jesus' Birth and Christmas and that's not wrong but it isn't the fulness of the truth that word is describing. It is actual a latin term that was taken from the Greek 'Parousia' that is used to describe the arrival of Jesus and establishing of His Kingdom. But what does that have to do with Christmas? To the early church advent wasn't just His First Appearing or His Second Coming, but it was a word that they used to describe the season time that we are now currently in. They didn't separate out His Birth and Return in their understanding but they rightfully saw them as one bigger event. Christ's Advent was the beginning of His Kingdom being established in the Earth that was initiated in His Birth and would continue to grow and expand until His Return. We need to keep this reality in our hearts as well as the days progress towards His Return, we need to understand that this was always the plan and He Will Return and ultimately fulfill what He began in His Birth, Death and Resurrection. There was also a third competent that they included in advent and that was the appearing of Christ in the hearts of believers in between His Birth and Return.

## The Genealogy of Jesus

### Matthew 1:1-17

'The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the Son of Abraham: Abraham begot Isaac, Isaac begot Jacob, and Jacob begot Judah and his brothers. Judah begot Perez and Zerah by Tamar, Perez begot Hezron, and Hezron begot Ram. Ram begot Amminadab, Amminadab begot Nahshon, and Nahshon begot Salmon. Salmon begot Boaz by Rahab, Boaz begot Obed by Ruth, Obed begot Jesse, and Jesse begot David the king. David the king begot Solomon by her who had been the wife of Uriah. Solomon begot Rehoboam, Rehoboam begot Abijah, and Abijah begot Asa. Asa begot Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat begot Joram, and Joram begot Uzziah. Uzziah begot Jotham, Jotham begot Ahaz, and Ahaz begot Hezekiah. Hezekiah begot Manasseh, Manasseh begot Amon, and Amon begot Josiah. Josiah begot Jeconiah and his brothers about the time they were carried away to Babylon. And

after they were brought to Babylon, Jeconiah begot Shealtiel, and Shealtiel begot Zerubbabel. Zerubbabel begot Abiud, Abiud begot Eliakim, and Eliakim begot Azor. Azor begot Zadok, Zadok begot Achim, and Achim begot Eliud. Eliud begot Eleazar, Eleazar begot Matthan, and Matthan begot Jacob. And Jacob begot Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus who is called Christ. So all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations, from David until the captivity in Babylon are fourteen generations, and from the captivity in Babylon until the Christ are fourteen generations.”

### **-The Family Tree**

Jesus family tree makes for a very interesting read. Matthew begins the genealogy of Jesus at Abraham and breaks down the generations in reference to both Abraham and David specifically as his emphasis is on Jesus being the Jewish Messiah as the seed of Abraham (Genesis 12:3) and The Son of David (2 Samuel 7:12-16). But in the midst of all of these names and family lines we see the inclusion of four particular women who's stories were full of controversy and scandal. Tamar tricked her father-in-law into sleeping with her to conceive an heir (Genesis 38), Rahab was a gentile prostitute who hid the spies in Jericho and was spared destruction and also became the mother of Boaz (Joshua 2, 6:22-23), Ruth was from Moab and became gathered in to Israel through her covenant with Naomi (Ruth 1) and 'her who had been the wife of Uriah' AKA Bathsheba the mother of Solomon who became the wife of King David through murder (2 Samuel 11). This shows us a few different things in regards to the age that The Messiah would usher in. Woman would begin to play a more central role in the days to come, that even the sinner and broken would be able to be included and ingrafted into the family through The Messiah and that our histories don't determine our future.

### **-Legal Lineage**

Now the genealogy listed here in Matthew is actually the legal lineage of the line of David but we have a slight problem. Jeconiah who was in the genealogy of David was cursed by God due to his behavior and was told that no-one from his line would sit on David's Throne (Jeremiah 22:30). Joseph's lineage from David comes through Solomon (Matthew 1:1-17) which put him in line for that curse pronounced from God. Now this is very crucial to the lineage of Jesus as He would need to fulfill the legal line to be the one who sits on David's Throne and according to this curse He couldn't. Where this gets interesting is that Mary on the other hand was in David's Line (Blood Line) through Nathan the second son of David and Bathsheba and not from the lineage where none could sit on David's Throne (Luke 3:28-38). So how does God make this all fall into place? In the book of Numbers (Numbers 27:1-11) we are introduced to the Daughters of Zelophehad who made an inheritance request to Moses based on not wanting their fathers lands to be inherited by another tribe if a man had no son but only daughters. Moses inquired of The Lord on their behalf and The Lord granted their request that the land could remain in the family through the daughters if there were no sons. Now what does this have to do with Jesus. The way that this request was outworked was that if a bride had no brothers, the father of the bride would adopt the bridegroom as a son in his house (Ezra 2:61, Nehemiah 7:63) This is reason the lineage of Luke places Joseph as a son of Heli, which is better understood as the son-in-law, is because of the request of the Daughters of Zelophehad which allowed Joseph to be adopted into the lineage of David without a curse and therefore making Jesus born into David's Line legally without the curse and able to sit on David's Throne!

## **Mary, Joseph and Jesus**

### **Matthew 1:18-25**

'Now the birth of Jesus Christ was as follows: After His mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not wanting to make her a public example, was minded to put her away secretly. But while he thought about these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream, saying, "Joseph, son of David, do not be afraid to take to you Mary your wife, for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit. And she will bring forth a Son, and you shall call His name JESUS, for He will save His people from their sins." So all this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying: "Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and bear a Son, and they shall call His name Immanuel," which is translated, "God with us." Then Joseph, being aroused from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord commanded him and took to him his wife, and did not know her till she had brought forth her firstborn Son. And he called His name JESUS.'

### **-No Reputation**

Now God could have created any number of ways to initiate His Plan for redemption but He chose to visit and set apart a teenage virgin called Mary and her betrothed Joseph. He chose to be born into the humblest of situations to come and become a servant of all and to even be born in the midst of cultural shame and controversy. He chose to identify with the very ones He was coming to redeem and save in weakness and dependency on The Father Alone and to not bring His Own Glory, Might or Reputation with Him to fulfill the Plan (Philippians 2:5-8). It is the beginning of His Upside-down Kingdom being established on the Earth.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 7:14 "'Therefore the Lord Himself will give you a sign: Behold, the virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, and shall call His name Immanuel.'"

## **The Magi**

### **Matthew 2:1-12**

'Now after Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the East came to Jerusalem, saying, "Where is He who has been born King of the Jews? For we have seen His star in the East and have come to worship Him." When Herod the king heard this, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he inquired of them where the Christ was to be born. So they said to him, "In Bethlehem of Judea, for thus it is written by the prophet: 'But you, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, are not the least among the rulers of Judah; for out of you shall come a Ruler who will shepherd My people Israel.'" Then Herod, when he had secretly called the wise men, determined from them what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem and said, "Go and search carefully for the young Child, and when you have found Him, bring back word to me, that I may come and worship Him also." When they heard the king, they departed; and behold, the star which they had seen in the East went before them, till it came and stood over where the young Child was. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with

exceedingly great joy. And when they had come into the house, they saw the young Child with Mary His mother, and fell down and worshiped Him. And when they had opened their treasures, they presented gifts to Him: gold, frankincense, and myrrh. Then, being divinely warned in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed for their own country another way.'

### **-Who Were They?**

The Magi (wise men) were actually from the Parthian Kingdom (Persia) and were not only a priesthood like the Levites, but also had the function of governing, electing and making Kings. Herod was put into place by the Roman Empire in Judea to bring stability to the region as it was a buffer state between the Empire's of Rome and Persia. So when these Parthian kingmakers showed up in Jerusalem it would have cause no small commotion as these Magi would have arrived most likely with a full military escort and quite a caravan of men with them. Their arrival would have been seen in some ways as a scouting trip for the Parthians to invade the troubled state of Judea if they hadn't appeared before Herod to explain why they had come. Now contrary to popular belief they were not astronomers but in fact dream interpreters, a skill they may have gleaned from Daniel who was actually the head of the Magi at one point (Daniel 4:9) who would have also told them of the prophecy of the King of The Jews who would come from Jacob (Numbers 24:17).

### **-The Star**

Now this star was not a natural one. It had initially appeared up to two years earlier to guide the Magi to Jerusalem which at that point it seemed to have disappeared. They most likely knew to follow the sign of the star from Daniel who would have told them of Balaam's prophecy which is recorded in Numbers 24:17a "'I see Him, but not now; I behold Him, but not near; a Star shall come out of Jacob;'"'. Once they had inquired of King Herod as to where The Messiah would be born it reappeared to guide them to Joseph and Mary's house where they would be able to present their gifts to the King of Kings!

### **-Gold, Frankincense and Myrrh**

Now the gifts they presented were threefold (which was had given rise to the tradition of the three kings) and they had very specific prophetic significance. The Gold was a gift for His Deity, the Frankincense was a gift for His Priestly Role and the Myrrh was a gift for His burial. They also represented the three unique facets of His Ministry Anointing as Messiah: Gold (King), Frankincense (High Priest) and Myrrh (Prophet).

### **-Young Child**

Now when the Magi arrive at Joseph and Mary's house they presented the gifts to a young child, not a baby contrary to church tradition. Now we really don't know at what age Jesus was, but it had been some time since His birth in the manger as they were now living in their own house.

### **-Warned In A Dream**

This is just a fun example of how The Lord knows how to speak to us in a language that we understand. The Magi were dream interpreters and it would seem only fitting for The Lord to warn them through a dream to not return to Herod but to go to their own country a different way.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Micah 5:2 "'But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of you shall come forth to Me The One to be Ruler in Israel, whose goings forth are from of old, from everlasting.'"

## **Egypt**

### **Matthew 2:13-16**

'Now when they had departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying, "Arise, take the young Child and His mother, flee to Egypt, and stay there until I bring you word; for Herod will seek the young Child to destroy Him." When he arose, he took the young Child and His mother by night and departed for Egypt, and was there until the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, "Out of Egypt I called My Son.'"

### **-Warned In A Dream**

Now an angel appeared to Joseph to warn him ahead of time that Herod was seeking to end Jesus life and told him to flee to Egypt until such a time as the angel reappeared. Dreams and visions are a key component to the age of Messiah and are an increasing reality as the age continues.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Hosea 11:1 "'When Israel was a child, I loved him, and out of Egypt I called My son.'

## **The Massacre of The Innocents**

### **Matthew 2:16-18**

'Then Herod, when he saw that he was deceived by the wise men, was exceedingly angry; and he sent forth and put to death all the male children who were in Bethlehem and in all its districts, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had determined from the wise men. Then was fulfilled what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying: "A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation, weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, refusing to be comforted, because they are no more.'"

### **-The Time The Star Appeared**

Now when Herod determined to kill all infant males two years and under, this was in relation to the time he learned of the stars appearing. Matthew 2:7 'Then Herod, when he had secretly called the wise men, determined from them what time the star appeared.' This can't be used as an accurate way to give an exact age for Jesus as Herod was using this as a timeline to sadly keep himself in power by making sure no male born during that period would survive.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Jeremiah 31:15 'Thus says the LORD: "A voice was heard in Ramah, lamentation and bitter weeping, Rachel weeping for her children, refusing to be comforted for her children, Because they are no more.'"

### **Nazareth**

#### **Matthew 2:19-23** (Luke 2:39)

'Now when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, "Arise, take the young Child and His mother, and go to the land of Israel, for those who sought the young Child's life are dead." Then he arose, took the young Child and His mother, and came into the land of Israel. But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judea instead of his father Herod, he was afraid to go there. And being warned by God in a dream, he turned aside into the region of Galilee. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, "He shall be called a Nazarene.'"

### **-Dreams and Messianic Signposts**

Now the angel that had warned Joseph to flee has reappeared to give him the message to return to Israel as Herod was dead. Where there this gets interesting is that the next warning comes from God Himself and Joseph leads the family to Nazareth. Now we have no record of the prophecy mentioned here but we are only two chapters into Matthew and we have seen prophetic dreams play a very important role in the leading of The Spirit and this is actually a Messianic signpost of the days that not only they were living in but a reality for us also who have received Jesus as Messiah (Joel 2: 28:32, Acts 2:14-21).

### **John The Baptist**

#### **Matthew 3:1-12** (Mark 1:2-8, Luke 3:1-20)

'In those days John the Baptist came preaching in the wilderness of Judea, and saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand!" For this is he who was spoken of by the prophet Isaiah, saying: "The voice of one crying in the wilderness: 'Prepare the way of the LORD; make His paths straight.'"

Now John himself was clothed in camel's hair, with a leather belt around his waist; and his food was locusts and wild honey. Then Jerusalem, all Judea, and all the region around the Jordan went out to him and were baptized by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins. But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said to them, "Brood of vipers! Who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Therefore bear fruits worthy of repentance, and do not think to say to yourselves, 'We have Abraham as our father.' For I say to you that God is able to raise up children to Abraham from these stones. And even now the ax is laid to the root of the trees. Therefore every tree which does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance, but He who is coming after me is mightier than I, whose sandals I am not worthy to carry. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit and fire. His winnowing fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly clean out His threshing floor, and gather His wheat into the barn; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.'"

### **-Forerunner and Transition**

One of the keys to a forerunner is that they are walking in what is coming before it is widespread. John was a forerunner to Jesus carrying the message of repentance before Jesus was revealed and baptized. Their messages were not in conflict with each other as John's call to repentance made the way for The Kingdom to be preached. John was also a point in transition as it says in Luke 16:16 "'The law and the prophets were until John. Since that time the kingdom of God has been preached, and everyone is pressing into it.'" Jesus Ministry was the fulfillment of The Law and Prophets and John's was the turning point for The Law and The Prophets.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 40:3 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness: "Prepare the way of the LORD; make straight in the desert a highway for our God.'

## **The Baptism of Jesus**

**Matthew 3:13-17** (Mark 1:9-11, Luke 3:21-22, John 1:29-34)

'Then Jesus came from Galilee to John at the Jordan to be baptized by him. And John tried to prevent Him, saying, "I need to be baptized by You, and are You coming to me?" But Jesus answered and said to him, "Permit it to be so now, for thus it is fitting for us to fulfill all righteousness." Then he allowed Him. When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.'"

### **-Fulfill All Righteousness**

Now Jesus had no sin to repent of, nor was in need of confessing sins so why was He baptized? He is identifying with the very people that He came to redeem and save in this baptism and He was standing in place of Israel before He would head into the desert to redeem what they had lost after the exodus. It is also an incredible prophetic picture of The Law and The Prophets (John) serving and making the way for the New Covenant.

## **The Desert**

**Matthew 4:1-11** (Mark 1:12-13, Luke 4:1-13)

'Then Jesus was led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil. And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry. Now when the tempter came to Him, he said, "If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread." But He answered and said, "It is written, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God.'" Then the devil took Him up into the holy city, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, "If You are the Son of God, throw Yourself down. For it is written: 'He shall give His angels charge over you,' and, 'In their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone.'" Jesus said to him, "It is written again, 'You shall not tempt the LORD your God.'" Again, the devil took



Him up on an exceedingly high mountain, and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory. And he said to Him, "All these things I will give You if You will fall down and worship me." Then Jesus said to him, "Away with you, Satan! For it is written, 'You shall worship the LORD your God, and Him only you shall serve.'" Then the devil left Him, and behold, angels came and ministered to Him.'

### **-Bread, Angelic Assistance and Kingdoms**

When satan came to tempt Jesus in the desert it was with three very distinct temptations and it was right at the end of the fast. He first came to tempt Jesus to take up His Own Glory and Power and disobey The Father by creating His Own bread from rocks, then it was to create a situation apart from The Will of The Father involving angelic assistance by throwing Himself from the temple and finally satan offered Jesus the Kingdoms of The Earth if He would worship him. What is quite interesting is that everyone of these temptations was actually an invitation to shortcut the process of God. Jesus was always going to eat again, He had angels minister to Him at the end of this fast and other times (Luke 22:43) and when He fulfilled His assignment He would have all of the Kingdoms of The Earth as His inheritance (Psalm 2:8). The enemy will use temptation to shortcut the process of what God is doing and might even use things that look like they very things we are promised to do it!

### **-The Word**

In this midst of these temptations Jesus response gives us a very important weapon with which to war with, The Word. He gives us a visual lesson in Ephesians 6:17 'And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God;' in how to combat the enemy. These very verses show us just how powerful the whole counsel of God's Word is when it comes to walking in the truth as the verses He uses to rebuke the devil with are all from The Old Testament (Deuteronomy 8:3, 6:16, 6:13). In fact Deuteronomy is the book of The Bible that Jesus quoted more than any other. But The Word needs to be anchored in relationship and intimacy as the enemy tried to use scripture to get Jesus off course, so we need to make sure we know the Scriptures and The Character of God so in the midst of these moments we can stand as Jesus did.



# Matthew: Week One

## Session Two

### The Ministry of Jesus Begins

Jesus has now come out of the desert in The Spirit and Power having succeeded where Israel had failed and now begins the public ministry that The Father has ordained. Jesus is begins His Ministry in Capernaum (which would also become His home during His Galilean Ministry) and in that place begins to call His Disciples to be with Him as He Teaches and Demonstrates to them The Kingdom of Heaven.

In this session we are going to be looking at Jesus most famous sermon which is better known as 'The Sermon on The Mount'. Where He begins to bring forth foundational truths like the beatitudes, turning the other cheek, giving, fasting, prayer and seeking first the Kingdom. This actually sets the standard so much higher than the Law as He will ultimately give humanity the opportunity to participate in His Nature by becoming born again and therefore be able to walk out this standard that He is setting in front of humanity. So lets begin to look at this Upside-Down Kingdom that Jesus has brought to the Earth.

### The Kingdom Is At Hand

**Matthew 4:12-17** (Mark 1:14-15, Luke 4:14-15)

'Now when Jesus heard that John had been put in prison, He departed to Galilee. And leaving Nazareth, He came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is by the sea, in the regions of Zebulun and Naphtali, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: "The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, by the way of the sea, beyond the Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: The people who sat in darkness have seen a great light, and upon those who sat in the region and shadow of death light has dawned." From that time Jesus began to preach and to say, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is **at hand**.'"

ἐγγίζω

Strong's G1448

engízō, eng-id'-zo; from G1451; to make near, i.e. (reflexively) approach:—approach, be at hand, come (draw) near, be (come, draw) nigh.

From the Root:

ἐγγύς

Strong's G1451

engýs, eng-goos'; from a primary verb ἄγχω árchō (to squeeze or throttle; akin to the base of G43); near (literally or figuratively, of place or time):—from , at hand, near, nigh (at hand, unto), ready.

- those who are near access to God.
- Jews, as opposed to those who are alien from God and his blessings.
- of times imminent and soon to come pass.

### **-At Hand**

More than just a figure of speech being used by Jesus to convey a spiritual truth to His listeners, this was a statement that was describing just how close His Rule and Reign really was because it was being ushered in through His Very Being. As they were standing next to Him in proximity to God it really was at hand! The Kingdom is found in The Holy Spirit (Romans 14:17) and that has also become the reality that is now abiding in every believer (1 Corinthians 6:17) and if it is truly at hand we need to release it the same way Jesus did through the laying on of hands (Mark 16:18) for healing, deliverance and freedom!

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 9:1-2 'Nevertheless the gloom will not be upon her who is distressed, as when at first He lightly esteemed the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward more heavily oppressed her, by the way of the sea, beyond the Jordan, in Galilee of the Gentiles. The people who walked in darkness have seen a great light; those who dwelt in the land of the shadow of death, upon them a light has shined.'

## **The First Disciples**

### **Matthew 4:18-22** (Mark 1:16-20, Luke 5:1-11)

'And Jesus, walking by the Sea of Galilee, saw two brothers, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen. Then He said to them, "Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men." They immediately left their nets and followed Him. Going on from there, He saw two other brothers, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets. He called them, and immediately they left the boat and their father, and followed Him.'

### **-Nets and Economics**

Now at a first glance the response of these four future disciples is quite astonishing enough, to just leave everything in a moment and follow Jesus. But these boats and nets represent more than just what they did, it was actually their economic security and it was also their inheritance from their fathers. Nets weren't just a way to catch fish to these four, it was their entire way of life and vocation (most likely from when they were small boys working with their fathers) and in one moment they left it all to follow Him. Jesus met them where they were at and used the very things that they had been schooled and trained in to give them an invitation that they could understand. He didn't ignore their skills but gave them a new context for those skills to be used in The Gospel, and He still does that very thing with us today where He Breathes on our gifts and skills to be used as an instrument for The Gospel.

## **The Healing Ministry of Jesus**

**Matthew 4:23-25** (Mark 1:35–39, Luke 4:44, 6:17–19)

‘And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all kinds of sickness and all kinds of disease among the people. Then His fame went throughout all Syria; and they brought to Him all sick people who were afflicted with various diseases and torments, and those who were demon-possessed, epileptics, and paralytics; and He healed them. Great multitudes followed Him—from Galilee, and from Decapolis, Jerusalem, Judea, and beyond the Jordan.’

### **-All Kinds**

As Jesus began to teach and preach in the synagogues He gave a demonstration of the very Kingdom that He was addressing. Healing all who came to Him of all of the afflictions that were in front of Him. During this time there were many traveling Rabbis who would go from village to village and teach but there was no power being demonstrated in their teaching. This demonstration of power was actually so vital to The Gospel as to reveal The Nature and Works of The Father that Jesus said in John 10:37-38 “‘If I do not do the works of My Father, do not believe Me; but if I do, though you do not believe Me, believe the works, that you may know and believe that the Father is in Me, and I in Him.” The miracles were the very evidence of The Gospel that Jesus came to declare and demonstrate and we need to make sure that we have that same posture to demonstrate The Gospel through His Power that The Father would be seen and His Character would be known.

## **The Sermon on The Mount**

There has never been a more famous sermon ever preached than The Sermon on The Mount. With every Kingdom and Government there is a founding document that lays out how that country or kingdom will behave, govern and sustain itself, its values and principles and who the people will be collectively. These next three chapters of Matthew could easily be called the founding document of The Kingdom as Jesus lays out such clear instructions for how His followers are to behave and relate to each other, how to respond to God, love your enemies, pray and fast, give generously and how to walk in trust for all things as He Provides our daily bread. If we could live out these next three chapters more fully we would see such a dramatic change in our neighborhoods and families that we would be able to confidently say that the Kingdom is truly among us.

### **The Beatitudes**

**Matthew 5:1-12** (Luke 6:20-26)

‘And seeing the multitudes, He went up on a mountain, and when He was seated His disciples came to Him. Then He opened His mouth and taught them, saying: “Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are those who mourn, for they shall be comforted. Blessed are the meek, for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness, for they shall be filled. Blessed are the merciful, for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the merciful, for they shall

obtain mercy. Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God. Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness' sake, For theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are you when they revile and persecute you, and say all kinds of evil against you falsely for My sake. Rejoice and be exceedingly glad, for great is your reward in heaven, for so they persecuted the prophets who were before you."

### **-Poor In Spirit**

In order to enter into The Kingdom it takes this posture of being poor in spirit. Now this is an unusual term and it is the reality of mankind needing to recognize that they have such desperate need of God as within ourselves we are spiritually bankrupt. But once we come to this place of desperate need for Jesus it actually becomes a place of encounter and empowerment to walk in the Spirit but it is not something that we ever graduate from. It is a constant position of desperation for Jesus that will keep us anchored in The Kingdom and walking in The Will of God.

### **-Meek**

Now this is at times a very misunderstood term and is a value that is often overlooked in our modern age. In the ancient greek it is actually a word that was used to describe a wild stallion that has been broken in and had its strength placed under the reign of its master. This tells us that in order for us to be of use to The Master we have to yield our strength and will to His Hand so that He can direct our paths and produce much fruit through us. It is such an important word and dynamic to Jesus that it is actually the only word that He uses in The Gospels to describe Himself (Matthew 11:29) and if we are going to walk as He did (1 John 2:6) we need to take ahold of this reality.

## **Salt and Light**

**Matthew 5:13-16** (Mark 9:50, Luke 14:34-34)

"You are the salt of the earth; but if the salt loses its flavor, how shall it be seasoned? It is then good for nothing but to be thrown out and trampled underfoot by men. You are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hidden. Nor do they light a lamp and put it under a basket, but on a lampstand, and it gives light to all who are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works and glorify your Father in heaven."

### **-Salt**

When Jesus uses salt here to describe who we are to be in the world, the meaning of this is actually found in the Jewish people's history and offerings. With many of the offerings made in the temple there was to be an accompaniment of salt offered with the sacrifice and it was first included in the Grain Offering (Leviticus 2:1-16). This was a commitment offering given in response to the Burnt Offering, which took away the sin of the one offering it. Jesus is using salt here to point to the truth that there will be a covenant made where sin has been dealt with and it will require a response and commitment to this offering.

## Jesus and The Law

### Matthew 5:17-20

“Do not think that I came to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I did not come to destroy but to **fulfill**. For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled. Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these commandments, and teaches men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven; but whoever does and teaches them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say to you, that unless your righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven.”

πληρόω

Strong's G4137

plērōō, play-ro'-o; from G4134; to make replete, i.e. (literally) to cram (a net), level up (a hollow), or (figuratively) to furnish (or imbue, diffuse, influence), satisfy, execute (an office), finish (a period or task), verify (or coincide with a prediction), etc.:—accomplish, × after, (be) complete, end, expire, fill (up), fulfil, (be, make) full (come), fully preach, perfect, supply.

### -Fulfill

This one word really helps us to understand the mandate of Jesus in His First Appearing, that He wouldn't do away with The Law but in fact fulfill it. Meaning that He alone would be able to fulfill its requirements perfectly and in doing so bring us into Himself so that we would be able to live in the fulness of life that He Has purchased in His Death and Resurrection. The Law was put in place so that we would recognize our need for Jesus (Galatians 3:24) and that apart from Him we had no hope in walking out its statutes and ordinances perfectly.

## Murder in The Heart

### Matthew 5:21-26 (Luke 12:57-59)

“You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not murder, and whoever murders will be in danger of the judgment.’ But I say to you that whoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment. And whoever says to his brother, ‘Raca!’ shall be in danger of the council. But whoever says, ‘You fool!’ shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar, and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your gift there before the altar, and go your way. First be reconciled to your brother, and then come and offer your gift. Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are on the way with him, lest your adversary deliver you to the judge, the judge hand you over to the officer, and you be thrown into prison. Assuredly, I say to you, you will by no means get out of there till you have paid the last penny.”

### -Reconciliation

Jesus is pointing us to a very deep reality here as He begins to address the inward issues of mankind. We would see issues such as murder and anger as external problems but Jesus is beginning to unpack the real issue. The Heart. This inward reality is so vital to the walk of a believer that Jesus commands that if we have a relational issue with a brother, that we should make reconciliation the priority and not come into give worship until we have made an effort to be reconciled (Romans 12:18).

## **Adultery in The Heart**

### **Matthew 5:27-30**

“You have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not commit adultery.’ But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell. And if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell.”

### **-Sin Is Serious**

Jesus continues to deepen the truth of the heart and why it is so important to recognize where these sins begin. This was a truth that Solomon saw coming when he wrote Proverbs 4:23 ‘Keep your heart with all diligence, for out of it spring the issues of life.’ as sin will thoroughly defile a man if he does not see where this is being birthed from. It is so serious that Jesus said it would better for us to maimed and have those body members removed and enter into life than to keep the things that cause us to sin and be cast into hell.

## **Marriage**

### **Matthew 5:31-32** (Matthew 19:9, Mark 10:11-12, Luke 16:18)

“Furthermore it has been said, ‘Whoever divorces his wife, let him give her a certificate of divorce.’ But I say to you that whoever divorces his wife for any reason except sexual immorality causes her to commit adultery; and whoever marries a woman who is divorced commits adultery.”

## **Oaths**

### **Matthews 5:33-37**

“Again you have heard that it was said to those of old, ‘You shall not swear falsely, but shall perform your oaths to the Lord.’ But I say to you, do not swear at all: neither by heaven, for it is God’s throne; nor by the earth, for it is His footstool; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. Nor shall you swear by your head, because you cannot make one hair white or black. But let your ‘Yes’ be ‘Yes,’ and your ‘No,’ ‘No.’ For whatever is more than these is from the evil one.”

## **The Extra Mile**

### **Matthew 5:38-42** (Luke 6:29-31)

“You have heard that it was said, ‘An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.’ But I tell you not to resist an evil person. But whoever slaps you on your right cheek, turn the other to him also. If anyone wants to sue you and take away your tunic, let him have your cloak also. And whoever compels you to go one mile, go with him two. Give to him who asks you, and from him who wants to borrow from you do not turn away.”



## **-Offenses**

There have been a lot of different opinions about what Jesus is saying here, including some cultural thoughts that don't seem to fully be consistent with the character of Jesus. But these three examples are all dealing with the same issue and that is offense and Jesus's response to this is brilliant. If someone strikes you on the right cheek it will leave a mark of offense on the skin, so turn the offended cheek away and show them the cheek of grace without a mark. If someone takes your tunic (which is the undergarment of the outfit of the day) give him your cloak and cover over the tunic of offense with the cloak of grace. If someone compels you to walk a mile (a common practice of the day done by Roman soldiers making Jewish people carry their packs), walk out of the mile of offense and walk with them into the mile of grace. All of these responses are about how to deal with offenses and learning to respond with grace.

## **Love Your Enemies**

**Matthew 5:43-48** (Luke 6:27-28, 6:32-36)

""You have heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven; for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust. For if you love those who love you, what reward have you? Do not even the tax collectors do the same? And if you greet your brethren only, what do you do more than others? Do not even the tax collectors do so? Therefore you shall be perfect, just as your Father in heaven is **perfect**.""

**τέλειος**

Strong's G5046

τέλειος, tel'-i-os; from G5056; complete (in various applications of labor, growth, mental and moral character, etc.); neuter (as noun, with G3588) completeness:—of full age, man, perfect.

## **-The Opposite Spirit**

Jesus takes this heart dynamic even further by showing us that we are going to have to go even higher than what the Law required and let our hearts be tender enough in God's Hands to love those who hate us. We are called to walk in the opposite spirit and walk according to mercy and grace rather than walk according our natural desires for human justice. That will be only possible if we bring these things in prayer before the Lord and bless those who not only behave like an enemy, but actually in reality would opening identify as our enemies.

## **-Perfect**

Now the word that is used here in the Greek actually describes becoming mature and fully grown in all areas of our life like character, thought life, morals and coming into Christ Like Character. It isn't about never missing it or about having arrived but is an invitation into continual growth and maturity as we learn how to live from His Heart and Character.

## Giving

### Matthew 6:1-4

“Take heed that you do not do your charitable deeds before men, to be seen by them. Otherwise you have no reward from your Father in heaven. Therefore, when you do a charitable deed, do not sound a trumpet before you as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory from men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. But when you do a charitable deed, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, that your charitable deed may be in secret; and your Father who sees in secret will Himself reward you openly.”

### -Rewards and The Secret Place

Jesus is pointing believers into the secret place with The Father as a lifestyle that will cause them to become transformed, and it will be out of this place that He will reward us openly. Because if we do our righteous acts to be seen and recognized by men we have received our reward in their praises and applause. Jesus is addressing the motives of the heart and connecting this dynamic to rewards and intimacy and making sure that we don't put on a religious show of good behavior but in fact live from the heart of relationship with The Father.

## Prayer

### Matthew 6:5-14 (Luke 11:2-4)

“And when you pray, you shall not be like the hypocrites. For they love to pray standing in the synagogues and on the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by men. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. But you, when you pray, go into your room, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly. And when you pray, do not use vain repetitions as the heathen do. For they think that they will be heard for their many words. Therefore do not be like them. For your Father knows the things you have need of before you ask Him. In this manner, therefore, pray: Our Father in heaven, **hallowed** be Your name. Your kingdom come. Your will be done on earth as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, As we forgive our debtors. And do not lead us into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. For Yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen. For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.”

ἁγιάζω

Strong's G37

hagiázō, hag-ee-ad'-zo; from G40; to make holy, i.e. (ceremonially) purify or consecrate; (mentally) to venerate:—hallow, be holy, sanctify.

### -Hallowed

One of the main entry points for us to begin to walk in a lifestyle that sees The Kingdom of God made manifest is actually found in this one word that Jesus used in His model prayer for us, Hallowed. It is an old word in the English and isn't used much anymore but it is of vital importance that we grab ahold of

its meaning and application in our lives. It means 'To lift and set apart, to make Holy.' Before we can enter to expressing The Will of God in the Earth we need make sure that He is set apart and lifted up in our lives so that as we submit and yield to Him, He can begin to express His Will in and through us as His willing vessels.

### **-His Will**

Now this is a little controversial but the context of 'on earth as in heaven' isn't so much about making the Earth look just like Heaven before He Returns, but it is in fact about those who walk with Him living according to His Will as fully as as it is lived out in Heaven.

### **-Unforgiveness**

Forgiveness is one of the most powerful realities of The Gospel, that we can be forgiven of all of our sin is so remarkable and so powerful that it will be one of the things that we marvel over for all eternity. On the flip side of this is also the truth the unforgiveness is also a powerful reality (though not even close to forgiveness) that Jesus tells us that unless we forgive we cannot be forgiven. Unforgiveness actually restricts the life of God flowing through a believer and keeps them in a bondage that they might not even recognize as it hardens their hearts towards people and God and we are called to live with tenderness of heart and forgive freely.

### **Fasting**

#### **Matthew 6:16-18**

“Moreover, when you fast, do not be like the hypocrites, with a sad countenance. For they disfigure their faces that they may appear to men to be fasting. Assuredly, I say to you, they have their reward. But you, when you fast, anoint your head and wash your face, so that you do not appear to men to be fasting, but to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly.”

### **-When Not If**

In this passage of Scripture starting at Matthew 6:1 we see that Jesus is giving very pointed instructions for how we are to carry ourselves in secret before God. From giving to prayer and fasting He gives these as commands and not suggestions for this secret place lifestyle by using the word 'when' and not 'if'. This isn't optional for a lifestyle of consecration and it will become of greater need in the days ahead as we need that secret place established to hear His Voice in the midst of the noise and chaos of the world around us.

### **Treasure in Heaven**

#### **Matthew 6:19-21 (Luke 12:33-34)**

“Do not lay up for yourselves treasures on earth, where moth and rust destroy and where thieves break in and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys and where thieves do not break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.”

## **-Heart Allegiance**

The heart is a mysterious thing. It has the capacity for great love but it also has the ability for great idolatry. It will follow after what we have valued and align itself to what we treasure the most, so much so that apart from The Spirit of God it is the most deceitful part of man and cannot be trusted (Jeremiah 17:9). This is why we needed a heart transplant with a new nature attached to it (Ezekiel 36:26) so that we can live from the heart and not under it.

## **The Lamp of The Body**

**Matthew 6:22-23** (Luke 11:34-36)

“The lamp of the body is the eye. If therefore your eye is **good**, your whole body will be full of light. But if your eye is bad, your whole body will be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in you is darkness, how great is that darkness!”

**ἀπλοῦς**

Strong's G573

haploûs, hap-looce'; probably from G1 (as a particle of union) and the base of G4120; properly, folded together, i.e. single (figuratively, clear):—single.

## **-Single**

The word that is translated as good in the NKJV is actually more fully understood as being single and clear in vision. When we are fixed on Christ as our source and follow His leadership we actually begin to move away from double mindedness (James 1:6-8) and the light of Jesus begins to shine forth from our innermost being as we pursue and represent The Kingdom of God.

## **Serving Two Masters**

**Matthew 6:24**

“No one can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will be loyal to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve God and **mammon**.”

**μαμωνᾶς**

Strong's G3126

mammōnâs, mam-mo-nas'; of Chaldee origin (confidence, i.e. wealth, personified); mammonas, i.e. avarice (deified):—mammon.  
-riches (where it is personified and opposed to God)

## **-Mammon**

Jesus used a very specific name when He wanted to emphasize financial allegiance. He actually personified money and called it Mammon to show that there was more to money than was obvious to the natural eye. That money actually has the ability to become something that wields great influence in the life a person so much so that it acts like a person (or spirit) with its own will and desire being made

manifest in those who yield to its influence. Money should never have mastery over a believer as it makes a lousy master but can be an amazing tool in the hand of someone who has yielded it to The Lord's Direction and Power.

## **Don't Worry**

**Matthew 6:25-34** (Luke 12:22-31)

“Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat or what you will drink; nor about your body, what you will put on. Is not life more than food and the body more than clothing? Look at the birds of the air, for they neither sow nor reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not of more value than they? Which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? So why do you worry about clothing? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Now if God so clothes the grass of the field, which today is, and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, will He not much more clothe you, O you of little faith? Therefore do not worry, saying, ‘What shall we eat?’ or ‘What shall we drink?’ or ‘What shall we wear?’ For after all these things the Gentiles seek. For your heavenly Father knows that you need all these things. But seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you. Therefore do not worry about tomorrow, for tomorrow will worry about its own things. Sufficient for the day is its own trouble.”

## **-Don't Seek The Addition**

One of the ways we can get off target in our lives is to seek the things that are supposed to be added to us instead seeking The Kingdom of God and His Righteousness. There is nothing wrong with pursuing breakthrough as long as that breakthrough isn't of greater value to our hearts than One who will provide the breakthrough. There is a principle of firsts in God's Economy and when we make the second thing first it will cause our hearts to become divided and we will become moved out of divine alignment. Let's keep our hearts in pursuit of Him above all other things!



# Matthew: Week Two

## Session One

### The Upside-Down Kingdom

The sermon on the mount continues bringing us to the issues of judgment, diligence in prayer and which foundation we need to build our lives on as christians. From the conclusion of this amazing sermon in tonight's session the Ministry of Jesus begins to confront issues like leprosy, demonic possession, His Lordship over creation and the harvest that is waiting to be gathered in.

He is determined to fulfill His Fathers Will and invite Israel into the very fulfillment of The Law that they have placed their hope which is actually being fulfilled in their very hearing though the words of Jesus, but this isn't going to be without some controversy and resistance.

#### Unrighteous Judgement

**Matthew 7:1-6** (Luke 6:37-42)

“Judge not, that you be not judged. For with what judgment you judge, you will be judged; and with the measure you use, it will be measured back to you. And why do you look at the speck in your brother's eye, but do not consider the plank in your own eye? Or how can you say to your brother, 'Let me remove the speck from your eye'; and look, a plank is in your own eye? Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye. Do not give what is holy to the dogs; nor cast your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn and tear you in pieces.”

#### -Judge Not

The word judgment has been given a very negative connotation but it is actually a word that describes making a governing decision and using discernment to determine what is right. What Jesus is pointing us to is judgments being made unrighteously and warning us that the measure that we judge with will be measured back to our lives. There are righteous judgments that need to be made (1 Corinthians 5:9-13) and if we were not to make a judgment at all Jesus would have said don't judge period.

#### -Speck and Plank

Helping other believers get free of their issues is something that we need to be apart of as The Family of God, but there is a way in which we should help one another. We need to make sure that we are dealing with our own planks so that our own issues don't make us hypocrites or obscure the way we see and approach our brothers speck. One of the main reasons we can see the speck in another eye is that more often than not that speck is made of the same substance as our plank, thats why we know what it is.

## **Ask, Seek, Knock**

### **Matthew 7:7-12** (Luke 11:9-13)

“Ask, and it will be given to you; seek, and you will find; knock, and it will be opened to you. For everyone who asks receives, and he who seeks finds, and to him who knocks it will be opened. Or what man is there among you who, if his son asks for bread, will give him a stone? Or if he asks for a fish, will he give him a serpent? If you then, being evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who is in heaven give good things to those who ask Him! Therefore, whatever you want men to do to you, do also to them, for this is the Law and the Prophets.”

### **-Diligence**

There is a posture in prayer that we need to maintain if we are going to see the breakthrough come and that is one of diligence. It's not a lack of faith to continue to ask The Lord for the breakthrough in prayer, as it actually pleases Him that we are taking hold of His Nature as a Rewarder and pursuing Him for His Promises to be made manifest. As it is written in Hebrews 11:6 'But without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who diligently seek Him.'

### **-Father**

When Jesus makes mention of The Fatherhood of God He is actually referencing Israel back to her history with God as He has been a Father to her since the exodus as it is written in Exodus 4:22 “Then you shall say to Pharaoh, ‘Thus says the LORD: “Israel is My son, My firstborn.”’. This isn't about all of humanity being children of God as it says in John 1:12-13 'But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name: who were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.' as in order to be adopted in fully we need to receive Jesus as Messiah and become born again (John 3:2) to become children of God.

## **The Narrow Path**

### **Matthew 7:13-14** (Luke 13:24)

“Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many who go in by it. Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who find it.”

### **-Narrow Gate**

The invitation to follow Jesus really does walk us down a narrow path. The world wants to profess many different ways to God and peace, but Jesus emphatically tells us that there is only one way and He alone is that Gate and Path. The road to destruction broad and easy but the path of life is narrow and difficult as it is the path of The Cross and a crucified life.



## Know Them By Their Fruit

**Matthew 7:15-20** (Matthew 12:33, Luke 6:43-45)

“Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep’s clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves. You will know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes from thornbushes or figs from thistles? Even so, every good tree bears good fruit, but a bad tree bears bad fruit. A good tree cannot bear bad fruit, nor can a bad tree bear good fruit. Every tree that does not bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the fire. Therefore by their fruits you will **know** them.”

ἐπιγινώσκω

Strong's G1921

epiginōskō, ep-ig-in-ocē'-ko; from G1909 and G1097; to know upon some mark, i.e. recognize; by implication, to become fully acquainted with, to acknowledge:—(ac-, have, take)know(-ledge, well), perceive.  
-to know i.e. to perceive

### -Discern and Judge

Jesus tells us quite clearly that there will be those who will work their way amongst God’s People to deliberately lead believers astray and cause them harm and they will present themselves as fellow sheep. In order for us to navigate this we need to understand that the fruit of someones life will tell you what kind of tree they really are, regardless of what kind of tree they profess to be, and you cannot ignore what someones life produces. The Holy Spirit took it a step further with the Greek word He uses to instruct us to ‘know them’ and within that word is the reality to ‘perceive’ or discern by The Spirit who these people really are. Spiritual discernment (not suspicion) is a gift we need to grow in now more than ever as many who profess to be Christian are not and we need to be protectors of Gods Flock as the days unfold towards His Return.

## Workers of Iniquity

**Matthew 7:21-24** (Luke 6:46,13:26-27)

“Not everyone who says to Me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?’ And then I will declare to them, ‘I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!’”

### -Lawlessness

This perhaps one of the most confronting verses in the sermon on the mount, if not the whole New Testament. That the Gifts of The Spirit could be in operation in a persons life but there is no intimacy with Jesus is a stark warning for us to remain tender towards Him but there is another piece to the puzzle that we need to see. That whilst they were performing miracles and wonders they were working lawlessness (iniquity) along side of it, and this isn’t just missing it from time to time but is a lifestyle of continual willful sin. Holiness and purity still matters and the messenger and the message need to be of the same virtue and substance.

## The House on The Rock

**Matthew 7:24-29** (Luke 6:47-49)

“Therefore whoever hears these sayings of Mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man who built his house on the rock: and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew and beat on that house; and it did not fall, for it was founded on the rock. But everyone who hears these sayings of Mine, and does not do them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand: and the rain descended, the floods came, and the winds blew and beat on that house; and it fell. And great was its fall.” And so it was, when Jesus had ended these sayings, that the people were astonished at His teaching, for He taught them as one having **authority**, and not as the scribes.’

ἐξουσία

Strong's G1849

exousía, ex-oo-see'-ah; from G1832 (in the sense of ability); privilege, i.e. (subjectively) force, capacity, competency, freedom, or (objectively) mastery (concretely, magistrate, superhuman, potentate, token of control), delegated influence:—authority, jurisdiction, liberty, power, right, strength.

-a sign of the husband's authority over his wife

-the sign of regal authority, a crown

### -The Rock

One of the key things we can take away from these verses is that we are promised that storms will come in life and the only thing that will make a difference will be what we have built our lives on and whether or not we will live it out. Jesus likens His Words to a solid rock on which the believer will build their lives on that will be the only secure foundation for days ahead, but He also uses a different substance for those who have built their lives apart from His Words and that is sand. The interesting thing is sand is actually minute pieces of rock, which tells us that we should build on the whole counsel of His Word (the rock) and not just a few pieces or verses that we are comfortable with (sand).

### -Authority

The key difference here in how Jesus taught was that not only did He demonstrate the power of The Kingdom through miracles, signs and wonders but that when He spoke His Words carried a true authority that no-one else's teaching did. The word used for authority shows us that the authority of Jesus's Words had a governmental weight to them as well as the authority of a king and just as only The Holy Spirit could do, it also has a bridal paradigm to it as it is the word used for a husband's authority over his wife.

## Jesus Cleanses a Leper

**Matthew 8:1-4** (Mark 1:40-45, Luke 5:12-16)

“When He had come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed Him. And behold, a leper came and worshiped Him, saying, “Lord, if You are willing, You can make me clean.” Then Jesus put out His hand and touched him, saying, “I am willing; be cleansed.” Immediately his leprosy was cleansed. And Jesus said to him, “See that you tell no one; but go your way, show yourself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, as a testimony to them.”

### **-Jesus First Detailed Miracle in Matthew**

Now whilst this isn't the first miracle that Jesus performed it is the first one that Matthew describes in detail and the very miracle itself shows us a lot more than we see at first glance. In the Old Testament and the Jewish culture of the day Leprosy was a type and shadow of sin and considered to be a death sentence (much like sin). By Jesus healing a leper in this way He is actually demonstrating His Authority over sin and death and is also demonstrating the nature of The Kingdom He is initiating. The fact that He heals the leper through touch shows just how far Jesus is willing to go to meet our needs and that He came to personally confront sin and death face to face. The former leper is instructed to go and show himself to the priest after he is cleansed so that he can be accepted back into society (Leviticus 14).

### **-The Willingness of Jesus**

As God is no respecter of persons (Acts 10:34) His response to the leper shows us that the heart posture of Jesus towards humanity's needs is that He is Willing. What ever the healing need, He is Willing and it is this willingness that the devil has attacked in the lives of believers more than we realize. He doesn't accuse God's Ability to us when it comes to our own healing needs, the enemy will accuse God's Willingness towards moving on our behalf more than anything else. As we are pursuing our own healing breakthrough we need to be aware of the devil's schemes (2 Corinthians 2:11) and keep our heart anchored in Jesus words "I am willing;" and not be moved.

## **The Centurion's Faith**

### **Matthew 8:5-13 (Luke 7:1-10)**

'Now when Jesus had entered Capernaum, a centurion came to Him, pleading with Him, saying, "Lord, my servant is lying at home paralyzed, dreadfully tormented." And Jesus said to him, "I will come and heal him." The centurion answered and said, "Lord, I am not worthy that You should come under my roof. But only speak a word, and my servant will be healed. For I also am a man under authority, having soldiers under me. And I say to this one, 'Go,' and he goes; and to another, 'Come,' and he comes; and to my servant, 'Do this,' and he does it." When Jesus heard it, He marveled, and said to those who followed, "Assuredly, I say to you, I have not found such great faith, not even in Israel! And I say to you that many will come from east and west, and sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven. But the sons of the kingdom will be cast out into outer darkness. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth." Then Jesus said to the centurion, "Go your way; and as you have believed, so let it be done for you." And his servant was healed that same hour.'

### **-The Authority Principle**

There is a key principle here presented in the response of the centurion when he says 'For I also am a man under authority, having soldiers under me.' that shows us how authority actually works in The Spirit. It was because he was under authority (he was submitted to those over him) that he was able to exercise authority to those under him. We will only walk in authority to the degree that we are submitted to God's Authority and this is one of the main reason why believers get fatigued in warfare. They are resisting the devil but he isn't fleeing because they haven't first submitted to God (James 4:7).

### **-The Sent Word**

Not only did Jesus send His Word and heal this servant, but He is also the Sent Word (John 1:5) that came and healed us! Psalm 107:20 'He sent His word and healed them, and delivered them from their destructions.'

### **Peters Mother In-Law**

**Matthew 8:14-15** (Mark 1:29-31, Luke 4:38-39)

'Now when Jesus had come into Peter's house, He saw his wife's mother lying sick with a fever. So He touched her hand, and the fever left her. And she arose and served them.'

### **Capernaum Healing Service**

**Matthew 8:16-17**

'When evening had come, they brought to Him many who were demon-possessed. And He cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: "He Himself took our infirmities and bore our sicknesses."

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 53:4 'Surely He has borne our griefs and carried our sorrows; yet we esteemed Him stricken, smitten by God, and afflicted.'

### **The Cost of Being a Disciple**

**Matthew 8:18-22** (Luke 9:57-62)

'And when Jesus saw great multitudes about Him, He gave a command to depart to the other side. Then a certain scribe came and said to Him, "Teacher, I will follow You wherever You go." And Jesus said to him, "Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has nowhere to lay His head." Then another of His disciples said to Him, "Lord, let me first go and bury my father." But Jesus said to him, "Follow Me, and let the dead bury their own dead.'"

### **-Son Of Man**

This is actually the name that Jesus referred to Himself by more than any other name. It is a title used 81 times in the Gospels, it is connected to the Messiah's Majesty and Glory (Daniel 7:13-14) but also His Humility (Psalm 8:4). It is these very attributes that Jesus was emphasizing every time He called Himself the Son of Man and was also Him prophesying to The Day when He would return in His Glory and Reign.

### **-The Cost**

Jesus wasn't poor. His Ministry was actually financed by a few wealthy women (Luke 8:1-3) and He had many places to stay where He went. He is actually describing the cost of following Him to this Scribe and showing him how He walked in The Spirit with The Father Leading at all times. It wasn't something to be entered into lightly or quickly.

### **-Bury Doesn't Mean Dead**

When one of His disciples asked Him 'to go and bury his father' he wasn't talking about burying him at that moment but in fact remaining in his fathers house until he died. He was wanting to follow Jesus on his own timing and still keep his familial obligations. Jesus responds with 'let the dead bury their own dead' to show that anything put above Him and His Lordship will only produce death (Proverbs 14:12).

### **Jesus Rebukes The Storm**

**Matthew 8:23-27** (Mark 4:35-41, Luke 8:22-25)

'Now when He got into a boat, His disciples followed Him. And suddenly a great tempest arose on the sea, so that the boat was covered with the waves. But He was asleep. Then His disciples came to Him and awoke Him, saying, "Lord, save us! We are perishing!" But He said to them, "Why are you fearful, O you of little faith?" Then He arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm. So the men marveled, saying, "Who can this be, that even the winds and the sea obey Him?"'

### **-Asleep**

There is a powerful key for us to take ahold of here in this passage of Scripture. Jesus could sleep though a storm that the disciples couldn't see past, this shows us that you will only have authority over the storms you can sleep through.

### **-Rebuke**

"He spoke to the men first, for they were the most difficult to deal with: wind and sea could be rebuked afterwards." Spurgeon. This quote really does sum it up really well. Jesus Disciples were harder to command at times than creation.

### **Two Demon Possessed Men Healed**

**Matthew 8:28-34** (Mark 5:1-20, Luke 8:26-39)

'When He had come to the other side, to the country of the Gergesenes, there met Him two demon-possessed men, coming out of the tombs, exceedingly fierce, so that no one could pass that way. And suddenly they cried out, saying, "What have we to do with You, Jesus, You Son of God? Have You come here to torment us before the time?" Now a good way off from them there was a herd of many swine feeding. So the demons begged Him, saying, "If You cast us out, permit us to go away into the herd of swine." And He said to them, "Go." So when they had come out, they went into the herd of swine. And suddenly the whole herd of swine ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and perished in the water. Then those who kept them fled; and they went away into the city and told everything, including what had happened to the demon-possessed men. And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus. And when they saw Him, they begged Him to depart from their region.'

### **-Swine and Graves**

Now even for Jewish boys who maybe were not the most observant of The Law this region was considered to be unclean (Numbers 19:11) and obviously also Gentile territory due to the pig farming. Jesus was wanting to show the disciples that no one is beyond His reach or beyond the concerns of His

Father. This wasn't a place a good Jewish Rabbi would be found but it is also prophetic picture of Jesus walking into a world that has been defiled by sin and death to demonstrate The Love of The Father.

### **-Death and Destruction**

Once the demons have been cast into the herd of pigs they show us what the true motivation of the demonic really is as they ran the herd into the water. If left within a human their mandate is to kill and destroy the person by any means possible and to make sure that the life they live is one marked by loss and oppression.

### **-The Controversy of Deliverance**

If there is one aspect of Spirit filled ministry that has been a source of great controversy (apart from speaking in tongues) and outright resistance it is the modern day deliverance Ministry of Jesus. Even in a society that was spirit world aware like the first century Middle East, it was confronting to those living in darkness to see the authority and power of Jesus being demonstrated through deliverance. It is still confronting today but it is so needed in a world of hurt, broken and spiritually oppressed people to experience the delivering power of The Gospel that we need to make sure that we haven't become so sophisticated in our ministry expressions that we no longer have place or value for the ministry of deliverance.

## **The Paralytic**

**Matthew 9:1-8** (Mark 2:1-12, Luke 5:17-26)

'So He got into a boat, crossed over, and came to His own city. Then behold, they brought to Him a paralytic lying on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, He said to the paralytic, "Son, be of good cheer; your sins are forgiven you." And at once some of the scribes said within themselves, "This Man blasphemes!" But Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, "Why do you think evil in your hearts? For which is easier, to say, 'Your sins are forgiven you,' or to say, 'Arise and walk'? But that you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins"—then He said to the paralytic, "Arise, take up your bed, and go to your house." And he arose and departed to his house. Now when the multitudes saw it, they marveled and glorified God, who had given such power to men.'"

### **-The Heart Thinks**

Jesus makes a statement "Why do you think evil in your hearts? " that would almost seem to go against modern science when it comes to the thought life of a person and where it originates from. In the Old Testament mankind is described as being a two part creature, the physical body and the inner man (soul), but when it comes to the New Testament we find that we have become a tripartite creature (spirit, soul and body). So where does the heart fit in all of this? We find that the heart thinks, that is has been made new by salvation (Ezekiel 36:26), that it is where the very issues of life flow from (Proverbs 4:23) and it is the place where our words originate (Luke 6:45). It is the place where the spirit of a man and the soul of a man intersect and it actually informs our thought life more than anything else. With that we need to make sure that we begin to steward our inner most being by hiding His Word there (Psalm 119:11) and letting The Lord teach us what living from the heart really looks like.

## **-Forgiveness of Sins**

We find a very profound and simple truth being demonstrated here that is recorded in Psalm 103:3 'Who forgives all your iniquities, who heals all your diseases,'. That it's because of the forgiveness of sins we can receive healing for every part of our beings as illness, torment and death are all fruits of the fall of man that have been dealt with due to the forgiveness of sins that was purchased on the cross (John 1:29).

## **Jesus Calls Matthew**

### **Matthew 9:9-13** (Mark 2:13-17, Luke 5:27-32)

'As Jesus passed on from there, He saw a man named Matthew sitting at the tax office. And He said to him, "Follow Me." So he arose and followed Him. Now it happened, as Jesus sat at the table in the house, that behold, many tax collectors and sinners came and sat down with Him and His disciples. And when the Pharisees saw it, they said to His disciples, "Why does your Teacher eat with tax collectors and sinners?" When Jesus heard that, He said to them, "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. But go and learn what this means: 'I desire mercy and not sacrifice.' For I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance.'"

## **-Tax Collectors**

The Jews who worked as tax collectors for Rome were considered to the worst kind of sinner and traitors to their own people. They were serving the very Empire that had occupied their land, killed their people and over taxed their fellow countrymen. For Jesus to call such a person to be not only His Disciple but eventually also an apostle and leader in the early church would almost be unthinkable for a Rabbi to do. It isn't where He finds us that qualifies us to follow Him, it is Him alone and His Salvation that qualifies us to walk with Him.

## **Fasting**

### **Matthew 9:14-17** (Mark 2:18-22, Luke 5:33-39)

'Then the disciples of John came to Him, saying, "Why do we and the Pharisees fast often, but Your disciples do not fast?" And Jesus said to them, "Can the friends of the bridegroom mourn as long as the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, and then they will fast. No one puts a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; for the patch pulls away from the garment, and the tear is made worse. Nor do they put new wine into old wineskins, or else the wineskins break, the wine is spilled, and the wineskins are ruined. But they put new wine into new wineskins, and both are preserved.'"

## **-Friends of The Bridegroom**

What an incredible name to be called by Jesus, a friend of The Bridegroom. What an incredible privilege we have in walking with Jesus that He would call us friends but also that we would have a part to play in the preparation of His Bride for the day of His Return. He has called us to such a place of intimacy that we need to make sure we keep ourselves anchored there as we follow Him throughout all the days of our lives and make His Salvation known throughout the Earth.

## **-Mourning and Fasting**

Jesus connects the Old Testament reality of fasting/mourning to a day that His disciples hadn't yet walked in but would be crucial for them (and us) to enter into if they were to be effective in the bridal preparations of The Spirit. It wasn't to be a fast like that Pharisees or even like Johns, but would in fact be a part of the age that is to come and would take on a new dimension. This kind of fasting would transform and prepare the whole man (spirit, soul and body) to become a pure and spotless Bride (2 Corinthians 11:2) and not just be an external demonstration of repentance and mourning.

## **Jairus and The Woman**

**Matthew 9:18-25** (Mark 5:21-43, Luke 8:40-56)

'While He spoke these things to them, behold, a ruler came and worshiped Him, saying, "My daughter has just died, but come and lay Your hand on her and she will live." So Jesus arose and followed him, and so did His disciples. And suddenly, a woman who had a flow of blood for twelve years came from behind and touched the hem of His garment. For she said to herself, "If only I may touch His garment, I shall be made well." But Jesus turned around, and when He saw her He said, "Be of good cheer, daughter; your faith has made you well." And the woman was made well from that hour. When Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the flute players and the noisy crowd wailing, He said to them, "Make room, for the girl is not dead, but sleeping." And they ridiculed Him. But when the crowd was put outside, He went in and took her by the hand, and the girl arose. And the report of this went out into all that land.'

## **-The Ingathering of The Gentiles**

Now this particular woman isn't named but there is reason to believe that she was in fact a Gentile as if she was a Jew she would have been considered unclean by the Law (Leviticus 15) and would have lived outside the city to honor that command. The fact that she was in the city could point to her being Gentile but the underlying prophetic symbolism here is actually found in the progression of how this passage of Scripture unfolds. As Jesus is on the way to the ruler's house (Israel) He is stopped by a woman (Gentiles) who sees His Anointing and Authority and receives her miracle, showing the truth in the days that after His Ascension that there will be an ingathering of of the full number of the Gentiles (Romans 11:25) before Israel as a nation will receive Him.

## **Two Blind men and a Mute Healed**

**Matthew 9:27-34**

'When Jesus departed from there, two blind men followed Him, crying out and saying, "Son of David, have mercy on us!" And when He had come into the house, the blind men came to Him. And Jesus said to them, "Do you believe that I am able to do this?" They said to Him, "Yes, Lord." Then He touched their eyes, saying, "According to your faith let it be to you." And their eyes were opened. And Jesus sternly warned them, saying, "See that no one knows it." But when they had departed, they spread the news about Him in all that country. As they went out, behold, they brought to Him a man, mute and demon-possessed. And when the demon was cast out, the mute spoke. And the multitudes marveled, saying, "It was never seen like this in Israel!" But the Pharisees said, "He casts out demons by the ruler of the demons.'"



### **-Son of David**

This is a Messianic title and it is the first time it is mentioned in The New Testament. Though they could not see Jesus with their natural eyes, they could recognize in the spirit what others couldn't even see standing right in front of them. Jesus was the promised Messiah and they rightly appealed for mercy based on His Nature and not on their own righteousness.

### **-According To Their Faith**

It is important to take note in the Scriptures when Jesus makes mention of someones faith. Now until the new birth (John 3:3, 20:22) everybody's faith is lacking as it is incomplete apart from Jesus (Hebrews 12:2). Their faith was awakened by His question "Do you believe that I am able to do this?" and this shows us that faith does in fact come from hearing (Romans 10:17) and we need to make sure we have hearing heart as we are praying for the sick as His Voice carries the faith needed for the miracles that are going to be in front of us as we proclaim The Gospel.

### **Moved With Compassion**

#### **Matthew 9:35-38** (Luke 10:2-3)

'Then Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness and every disease among the people. But when He saw the multitudes, He was moved with compassion for them, because they were weary and scattered, like sheep having no shepherd. Then He said to His disciples, "The harvest truly is plentiful, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray the Lord of the harvest to **send out** laborers into His harvest."

**ἐκβάλλω**

Strong's G1544

ekbállō, ek-bal'-lo; from G1537 and G906; to eject (literally or figuratively):—bring forth, cast (forth, out), drive (out), expel, leave, pluck (pull, take, thrust) out, put forth (out), send away (forth, out).

### **-Moved**

One of the ways that Jesus followed the leading of The Spirit was to follow after the movings of compassion that were manifested within Himself as He faced certain healing needs and situations. This kind of compassion wasn't just a nice gooey feeling but in fact a deep inward burden as we see expounded in 1 John 3:17(KJV) 'But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?'<sup>1</sup>. It was a deep inward groaning of the Love of God that had to be expressed in order for the burden to lift. We need to be aware of these kinds of inward promptings from Holy Spirit as they will lead to some of the most spectacular miracles we will ever see.

---

<sup>1</sup> The Holy Bible, King James Version. New York: American Bible Society: 1999; Bartleby.com, 2000

### **-Send Out**

Now the word choices used by Holy Spirit as He Authored The Scriptures (2 Peter 1:19-21) are not by accident or coincidence but are on purpose and with intent. The word used for 'sent' when it comes to laborers in the harvest is in fact the very same word used for the violent casting out of demons. There is such a strong need for Gospel laborers to go forth into the Earth that the Holy Spirit will send them with a violent strength and momentum into the harvest to accomplish the Great Commission that will be quite confronting to those who expect a much quieter and less combative Gospel to come forth.

# Matthew: Week Two

## Session Two

### Apostles and Servants

In this session we also begin to see Jesus being rejected in chapter 12 in His interactions with the Pharisees around deliverance and the sabbath and from that point the public ministry of Jesus begins to change in its tone and particularly in its language as He teaches what is known as the 'Parables of the Kingdom' (we will look at those next week). This changes not only His teaching style but also causes Him to move away from the region of Galilee and into Judea.

But before we can get to all of that we need to start with His disciples becoming His apostles and being sent on their own mission to declare The Kingdom of God, persecutions being promised, John The Baptist in jail and Jesus rebuking the cities where most of His Miracles were performed. We are about a year into Jesus Ministry and it is not going to get any easier from here.

#### The Twelve Apostles

**Matthew 10:1-4** (Mark 3:13-19, Luke 6:12-16)

'And when He had called His twelve disciples to Him, He gave them power over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all kinds of sickness and all kinds of disease. Now the names of the twelve **apostles** are these: first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the tax collector; James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddaeus; Simon the Cananite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed Him.'

ἀπόστολος

Strong's G652

apóstolos, ap-os'-tol-os; from G649; a delegate; specially, an ambassador of the Gospel; officially a commissioner of Christ ("apostle") (with miraculous powers):—apostle, messenger, he that is sent.

#### -Apostles

This is the first generation of ambassadors of The Kingdom that would set the foundation for the not only the early church but would give an apostolic inheritance for the generations that would follow. The word for apostle is actually a governmental term that was used by Rome for an ambassador of the Roman way of life and culture. They wouldn't be sent to conquer in the traditional sense but were sent to

'Romanize' the people and bring them into their way of life and culture. This is the mandate of apostles and apostolic people in the church even today for we are all called to be ambassadors of The Gospel (2 Corinthians 5:20), but not all are called to be apostles in a fivefold office, and therefore we are to 'Kingdomize' those who are being saved and brought into The Kingdom.

## **Sent**

**Matthew 10:5-15** (Mark 6:7-13, Luke 9:1-6)

'These twelve Jesus sent out and commanded them, saying: "Do not go into the way of the Gentiles, and do not enter a city of the Samaritans. But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as you go, preach, saying, 'The kingdom of heaven is at hand.' "Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out demons. Freely you have received, freely give. Provide neither gold nor silver nor copper in your money belts, nor bag for your journey, nor two tunics, nor sandals, nor staffs; for a worker is worthy of his food. Now whatever city or town you enter, inquire who in it is worthy, and stay there till you go out. And when you go into a household, greet it. If the household is worthy, let your peace come upon it. But if it is not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whoever will not receive you nor hear your words, when you depart from that house or city, shake off the dust from your feet. Assuredly, I say to you, it will be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city!"'

### **-Character Then Power**

At this point the disciples have been walking with Jesus for between 1-1.5 year/s and up until now there have been no record of them in Scripture praying for sick or ministering in power. This shows us that Jesus wanted to model the right way to minister and make sure that character is emphasized before His Disciples are released to minister in power. We need to make sure that the people we are raising up are also established in character before they are released to minister.

### **-Person of Peace**

Now there is a person of peace in most seasons that we will face when it comes to walking into a new territory and that is someone that will receive the peace of Jesus that we are carrying and will remain on them. This person of peace also becomes a vital part of the provision of God for the season that those believers are amongst them proclaiming The Gospel.

### **-Dust**

Now the dust being mentioned here has a few different implications for the disciples. Dust is actually a type of the flesh of man (Genesis 2:7) and part of this instruction to the disciples is to make sure that they do not bring the works and offense of the flesh with them after The Gospel hasn't been received. But also that the disciples wouldn't even carry the very dust of that moment with them as they head into their next assignment as regret and introspection are very normal human responses to a perceived failure and Jesus wants us to walk clean and lightly before Him. This very act of dusting themselves off is also actually the witness against that town and season that they wouldn't receive The Gospel.

## Persecution

**Matthew 10:16-27** (Mark 13:9-13, Luke 21:12-17)

“Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves. Therefore be wise as serpents and harmless as doves. But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to councils and scourge you in their synagogues. You will be brought before governors and kings for My sake, as a testimony to them and to the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, do not worry about how or what you should speak. For it will be given to you in that hour what you should speak; for it is not you who speak, but the Spirit of your Father who speaks in you. Now brother will deliver up brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death. And you will be hated by all for My name’s sake. But he who endures to the end will be saved. When they persecute you in this city, flee to another. For assuredly, I say to you, you will not have gone through the cities of Israel before the Son of Man comes. A disciple is not above his teacher, nor a servant above his master. It is enough for a disciple that he be like his teacher, and a servant like his master. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more will they call those of his household! Therefore do not fear them. For there is nothing covered that will not be revealed, and hidden that will not be known.”

### -Disciple Like His Teacher

Jesus is setting forth some very clear and vivid realities for not only the twelve to take a hold of but also for us as well. The Gospel has always come under fire and endured hardships and persecution and the peace and good reputation that Christians have experienced in the west over the past 100 years is an anomaly in the view of two thousand years of church history that has been marked and birthed in trials. Jesus clearly instructs us that if He as our Lord and Master experienced persecution and resistance we should also expect that same treatment as His servants and disciples.

## Jesus Teaches The Fear of God

**Matthew 10:27-31** (Luke 12:3-7)

“Whatever I tell you in the dark, speak in the light; and what you hear in the ear, preach on the housetops. And do not fear those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul. But rather **fear** Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a copper coin? And not one of them falls to the ground apart from your Father’s will. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not fear therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows.”

**φοβέω**

Strong's G5399

phobéō, fob-eh'-o; from G5401; to frighten, i.e. (passively) to be alarmed; by analogy, to be in awe of, i.e. revere:—be (+ sore) afraid, fear (exceedingly), reverence.

From the Root:

**φόβος**

Strong's G5401

phóbos, fob'-os; from a primary **φέβομαι** phébomai (to be put in fear); alarm or fright:—be afraid, + exceedingly, fear, terror.  
-fear, dread, terror

### **-The Fear of The Lord**

Hebrews 10:31 'It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.' is such an eloquent way to explain this reality that has been largely ignored by the modern church or even been explained away by teachings creating a Father Who never corrects or disciplines His children but looks more like Santa than the Ancient of Days (Daniel 7:9). He is Good and that will never change, but He is also Holy and when we truly take hold of His Holiness it will birth in us a true Fear of The Lord that the Greek word used here in this passage describes. That we are in dreadful awe of His Majesty and Power and He is the only One Worthy to Rule and Judge the universe.

### **Confess or Deny**

#### **Matthew 10:32-33** (Luke 12:8-9)

""Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven.""

### **The Dividing Line**

#### **Matthew 10:34-39** (Luke 12:51-53,14:26-27)

""Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword. For I have come to 'set a man against his father, a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law'; and 'a man's enemies will be those of his own household.' He who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And he who does not take his cross and follow after Me is not worthy of Me. He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for My sake will find it.""

### **-A Sword**

This is quite a confronting reality when we allow what Jesus is saying to really penetrate our heart. He has come to reconcile the world to Himself (2 Corinthians 5:18-19) through humanity receiving Him and Him alone as the Gate to The Kingdom, but there is another facet to His Mandate that we need to understand. That is His Mandate as The Sword of The Lord. There is a dividing line that has been drawn in the sand by His Appearing and He is Separating out those who are His and those who will not receive Him. This separation goes beyond sentimental family allegiances and is based on Him being Lord in our lives and that we have no allegiance higher than our allegiance to Him. Peace will be the end result of His Return but until then there will be a divide in the Earth and that is by design and is a confronting expression of Love as He cannot permit darkness to be treated as light.

### **-Take Up Your Cross**

Jesus makes this very personal and at the same time leaves no room for interpretation. The cross was absolute in its authority to execute and no one came through it victorious and alive, it was an uncompromising foe that never lost. Jesus is pointing to the cost and lifestyle that a disciple would have to undertake in order to follow Him. That we would continually and daily give ourselves over to death and leave nothing behind of our old life in order to follow Him as Lord.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled And Being Fulfilled**

Micah 7:6 'For son dishonors father, daughter rises against her mother, daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law; a man's enemies are the men of his own household.' Now this verse was initially fulfilled in Jesus First Coming and is being fulfilled from that day until His Return as this dynamic will only increase as the days progress.

### **A Cup of Cold Water**

#### **Matthew 10:40-42 (Mark 9:41)**

""He who receives you receives Me, and he who receives Me receives Him who sent Me. He who receives a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward. And he who receives a righteous man in the name of a righteous man shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whoever gives one of these little ones only a cup of cold water in the name of a disciple, assuredly, I say to you, he shall by no means lose his reward.""

### **-A Prophets Reward**

Now there has been a variety of teaching on this subject in the past few years and most of it is directed towards the thought that a prophets reward is a prophetic word from that prophet. Now that sounds good but it goes much further than that. Paul writes in Ephesians 4:7 'But to each one of us grace was given according to the measure of Christ's gift.' in reference to what we know as the Fivefold or Headship Gifts of Christ as they have been given by Christ to represent His Headship and Leadership to The Body. Now these gifts are according to 'the measure of Christs gift' which means that there is a measure of Christ that has been deposited in these Fivefold office gifts which is to then be accessed and formed within The Body of Christ to mature and grow them as well as equip them for ministry (Ephesians 4:11-16). So the prophets reward is in fact the measure of Christ that the prophet carries within themselves being received and formed within those who honor and recognize that gift.

### **John's Messengers**

#### **Matthew 11:1-19 (Luke 7:18-35)**

'Now it came to pass, when Jesus finished commanding His twelve disciples, that He departed from there to teach and to preach in their cities. And when John had heard in prison about the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples and said to Him, "Are You the Coming One, or do we look for another?" Jesus answered and said to them, "Go and tell John the things which you hear and see: The blind see and the lame walk; the lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear; the dead are raised up and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is he who is not offended because of Me." As they departed, Jesus began to say to the multitudes concerning John: "What did you go out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken by the wind? But what did you go out to see? A man clothed in soft garments? Indeed, those who wear soft clothing are in kings' houses. But what did you go out to see? A prophet? Yes, I say to you, and more than a prophet. For this is he of whom it is written: Behold, I send My messenger before Your face, who will prepare Your way before You.' Assuredly, I say to you, among those born of women there has not risen one greater than John the Baptist; but he who is least in the

kingdom of heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if you are willing to receive it, he is Elijah who is to come. He who has ears to hear, let him hear! But to what shall I liken this generation? It is like children sitting in the marketplaces and calling to their companions, and saying: 'We played the flute for you, and you did not dance; we mourned to you, And you did not lament.' For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, 'He has a demon.' The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, 'Look, a glutton and a winebibber, a friend of tax collectors and sinners!' But wisdom is justified by her children.""

### **-John's Offense**

There is a very important principle for us to understand here in John's situation and heart posture in prison. John was a student of Isaiah and Jesus response to Him was in the signs and language of Isaiah, so he could attach his heart to truth in the midst of a situation that didn't look like he planned and He cautioned Him to not become offended on account of Him. We can have a correct prophetic word and have been obedient to the understanding of that word that we have, which is always in part (1 Corinthians 13:9), but we can become offended at God if we don't understand that His Ways are not ours (Isaiah 55:8). We need to make sure that our own understanding or even our expectations of how our callings will look, do not cause us to become offended at the way that God Himself unfolds His Calling for us.

### **-Elijah**

John came in the spirit and the power of Elijah (Luke 1:17) with the same mandate as Elijah to return the hearts of Israel back to the heart of their Father (Exodus 4:22, Malachi 4:6). This will also be a dynamic in the days leading up to The Lord's Return as the spirit of Elijah will be released once again to gather into The Kingdom those in Israel who will receive Jesus as Messiah.

### **-The Law Unto John**

According to this passage we see that John is actually the close of The Old Testament and the greatest of the Old Testament prophets and it is important to see that The New Covenant is actually housed in the person of Jesus and is sealed in His shed Blood on the cross.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Malachi 3:1 ""Behold, I send My messenger, and he will prepare the way before Me. and the Lord, whom you seek, will suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, in whom you delight. Behold, He is coming," says the LORD of hosts.'

## **Woe's and Rebukes**

### **Matthew 11:20-24** (Luke 10:13-15)

'Then He began to rebuke the cities in which most of His mighty works had been done, because they did not repent: "Woe to you, Chorazin! Woe to you, Bethsaida! For if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I



say to you, it will be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you. And you, Capernaum, who are exalted to heaven, will be brought down to Hades; for if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say to you that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for you.”

### **-Repentance**

Jesus connects The New Testament reality of repentance to the Old Testament expression of sitting in sackcloth and ashes, with their garments also being torn open, to give a visual representation of what needs to be an internal reality for those in the New Covenant. Repentance needs to be an inward rending of our hearts in godly sorrow (2 Corinthians 7:10) that positions us in humility to receive from The Lord's Mercy that will produce in us a new mind and way of thinking. This is the response that Jesus is looking for from these towns and in turn from us as believers.

### **The Yoke of Jesus**

#### **Matthew 11:25-30** (Luke 10:21-22)

‘At that time Jesus answered and said, “I thank You, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that You have hidden these things from the wise and prudent and have revealed them to babes. Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in Your sight. All things have been delivered to Me by My Father, and no one knows the Son except the Father. Nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and the one to whom the Son wills to reveal Him. Come to Me, all you who labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light.”’

### **-Yoke**

The yoke Jesus is referencing here is a piece of wood that is made to go over two oxen so that they can work and plow the field together and they would pair an older animal with a younger to show them the way. This invitation from Jesus is to come under His yoke and receive His strength working alongside us and guiding us as we work in the Kingdom to bring forth the works that The Father has ordained for us. It is in this place of submission and yielding that we find rest for our souls and we begin to learn the rhythm of humility, meekness and the heartbeat of Jesus.

### **Lord of The Sabbath**

#### **Matthew 12:1-8** (Mark 2:23-28, Luke 6:1-5)

‘At that time Jesus went through the grainfields on the Sabbath. And His disciples were hungry, and began to pluck heads of grain and to eat. And when the Pharisees saw it, they said to Him, “Look, Your disciples are doing what is not lawful to do on the Sabbath!” But He said to them, “Have you not read what David did when he was hungry, he and those who were with him: how he entered the house of God and ate the showbread which was not lawful for him to eat, nor for those who were with him, but only for

the priests? Or have you not read in the law that on the Sabbath the priests in the temple profane the Sabbath, and are blameless? Yet I say to you that in this place there is One greater than the temple. But if you had known what this means, 'I desire mercy and not sacrifice,' you would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath.'"

### **-Gleaning**

The disciples were not in violation of The Law here as they were not working or harvesting but in fact gleaning (Deuteronomy 23:25). What they were violating were the additional requirements that man had put on top of God's Law. Jesus never broke the Sabbath but in fact rightfully points out that He is The Lord of The Sabbath and is its ultimate fulfillment as He has instituted a perpetual rest for God's People to enter into (Hebrews 4:1-10) by faith and that will be found within Him.

### **Healing on The Sabbath**

**Matthew 12:9-14** (Mark 3:1-6, Luke 6:6-11)

'Now when He had departed from there, He went into their synagogue. And behold, there was a man who had a withered hand. And they asked Him, saying, "Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath?"—that they might accuse Him. Then He said to them, "What man is there among you who has one sheep, and if it falls into a pit on the Sabbath, will not lay hold of it and lift it out? Of how much more value then is a man than a sheep? Therefore it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath." Then He said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." And he stretched it out, and it was restored as whole as the other. Then the Pharisees went out and plotted against Him, how they might destroy Him.'

### **Behold My Servant**

**Matthew 12:15-21**

'But when Jesus knew it, He withdrew from there. And great multitudes followed Him, and He healed them all. Yet He warned them not to make Him known, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying: "Behold! My Servant whom I have chosen, my Beloved in whom My soul is well pleased! I will put My Spirit upon Him, and He will declare justice to the Gentiles. He will not quarrel nor cry out, nor will anyone hear His voice in the streets. A bruised reed He will not break, and smoking flax He will not quench, till He sends forth justice to victory; and in His name Gentiles will trust.'"

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 42:1-3 "'Behold! My Servant whom I uphold, My Elect One in whom My soul delights! I have put My Spirit upon Him; He will bring forth justice to the Gentiles. He will not cry out, nor raise His voice, nor cause His voice to be heard in the street. A bruised reed He will not break, and smoking flax He will not quench; He will bring forth justice for truth.'

## A House Divided

**Matthew 12:22-30** (Mark 3:22-27, Luke 11:14-23)

'Then one was brought to Him who was demon-possessed, blind and mute; and He healed him, so that the blind and mute man both spoke and saw. And all the multitudes were amazed and said, "Could this be the Son of David?" Now when the Pharisees heard it they said, "This fellow does not cast out demons except by Beelzebub, the ruler of the demons." But Jesus knew their thoughts, and said to them: "Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and every city or house divided against itself will not stand. If Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself. How then will his kingdom stand? And if I cast out demons by Beelzebub, by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, surely the kingdom of God has come upon you. Or how can one enter a strong man's house and plunder his goods, unless he first binds the strong man? And then he will plunder his house. He who is not with Me is against Me, and he who does not gather with Me scatters abroad.'"

### -Beelzebub

The name that the Pharisees chose to call Jesus due to their offense and anger is actually a lot stronger and more offensive than meets the eye. The name Beelzebub is actually derived from a Philistine deity that was the lord of the fly and Chaldean deity that was the dung god. What they are really saying about Jesus power and ministry is that its source comes the lord of dung flies and that Jesus was in subjection to that same spirit.

### -A House Divided

Now Jesus rightfully points out that satan will not do the work of God for Him as that would divide his dominion and with that kind of division satan would be actively working against himself by giving freedom to the very people he is determined to keep in bondage. Jesus then points their own exorcism ministry back to them and asks them who is it that empowers them to cast out demons. They will be judged by their own fruit and at this point Jesus tell us that if people are not actively for them they are against them.

## The Unforgivable Sin

**Matthew 12:31-32** (Mark 3:28-30, Luke 12:10)

""Therefore I say to you, every sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven men. Anyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man, it will be forgiven him; but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it will not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the age to come.'"

### -The Blasphemy of The Holy Spirit

This one passage of scripture has probably been the subject of more pastoral counseling sessions than any other verse in the Bible. The context to understanding what is being said here is actually found in the exchange between Jesus and the Pharisees regarding the power that Jesus is working miracles by. It is The Holy Spirit's Ministry to elevate and unveil Jesus to the world (John 16:5-15) so that they might receive Him as Lord and Savior and with that, to attribute the ministry and work of The Holy Spirit to the

work of the devil is a very serious thing. This also isn't about a single act so much as it about a lifestyle where the conscience of a person is no longer concerned with the conviction of The Holy Spirit and has become seared (1 Timothy 4:1-5) to the point of having no issue with refusing God. The people who are most concerned that they have committed this sin actually show by their conscience being alive to not wanting to blaspheme God that they have not in fact committed this sin.

## **A Tree and It's Fruit**

### **Matthew 12:33-37** (Matthew 7:15-20)

“Either make the tree good and its fruit good, or else make the tree bad and its fruit bad; for a tree is known by its fruit. Brood of vipers! How can you, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaks. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good things, and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things. But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgment. For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned.”

### **-Out of The Heart**

The dynamics of the inner world of humanity is of great importance and focus in the teaching of Jesus as He is constantly pointing to the heart as being of paramount importance when it comes to character and transformation. Our words are birthed in our hearts and our mouths will only speak out of the nature and character that what we have stored within there. This is why trying to hold your tongue doesn't work as the tongue is untamable in and of itself (James 3:8) as it is actually subject to what is in the heart of a person. If we want to change the words of our mouth we need to have our hearts transformed and subject to Holy Spirit.

### **-The Power of Your Words**

Now words are so much powerful that we sometimes understand. God Himself has set the stage for the power of words when created all things by the Words of His Mouth (Genesis 1:1-2, Hebrews 11:3) but this also shows us that the substance released by those words is consistent with what is inside of the one speaking them (Proverbs 18:21). This is why we will be held accountable by the words of our mouths because they reveal the substance of what is inside our hearts and what we truly believe.

## **The Sign of Jonah**

### **Matthew 12:38-43** (Luke 11:29-32)

“Then some of the scribes and Pharisees answered, saying, “Teacher, we want to see a sign from You.” But He answered and said to them, “An evil and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, and no sign will be given to it except the sign of the prophet Jonah. For as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the great fish, so will the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh will rise up in the judgment with this generation and condemn it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and indeed a greater than Jonah is here. The queen of the South will rise up in the judgment with this generation and condemn it, for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and indeed a greater than Solomon is here.”

### **-The Queen of The South**

Jesus makes mention of the Queen of the South (better known as the Queen of Sheba which is modern day Yemen) who travelled a great distance to seek out the wisdom of King Solomon (1 Kings 10:1-11) and also the men of Nineveh being a part of those who will condemn the generation that Jesus is addressing. Both of these examples show people who acknowledged God's Way's and Wisdom and responded rightly but now one greater than Jonah and Solomon is speaking and the people haven't acknowledged that God and His Wisdom is being revealed amongst them.

### **Deliverance**

#### **Matthew 12:43-45** (Luke 11:24-26)

""When an unclean spirit goes out of a man, he goes through dry places, seeking rest, and finds none. Then he says, 'I will return to my house from which I came.' And when he comes, he finds it empty, swept, and put in order. Then he goes and takes with him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter and dwell there; and the last state of that man is worse than the first. So shall it also be with this wicked generation.""

### **-Full House**

When we see people getting free from demonic issues we need to make sure that the place that the unclean spirit has been oppressing is occupied by Holy Spirit. This is the full house principle as Jesus Himself said of the devil trying to find an entry point in His Life in John 14:30 "I will no longer talk much with you, for the ruler of this world is coming, and he has nothing in Me." Jesus is pointing to the truth that we need to make sure we have no room in our life for the devil to find an entrance (Ephesians 4:27) and the only way to do that is to make sure that we keep our house full and surrendered to Holy Spirit.

### **Jesus Family**

#### **Matthew 12:46-50** (Mark 3:31-35, Luke 8:19-21)

'While He was still talking to the multitudes, behold, His mother and brothers stood outside, seeking to speak with Him. Then one said to Him, "Look, Your mother and Your brothers are standing outside, seeking to speak with You." But He answered and said to the one who told Him, "Who is My mother and who are My brothers?" And He stretched out His hand toward His disciples and said, "Here are My mother and My brothers! For whoever does the will of My Father in heaven is My brother and sister and mother."'

### **-New Family Definition**

Now God created the family unit when He Created all things so family in and of itself is not evil or the issue here. Jesus is taking the standing and definition of family even higher than what would have been culturally accepted or the norm for His day and also for ours. He is making sure that there is no competing allegiance for the hearts and obedience of His disciples as He brings them to the reality that family is now found inside of The Kingdom and not just a bloodline or natural reproduction. Those who do The Will of The Father are now considered our first family as this will be the family we are guaranteed to spend eternity with.



# Matthew: Week Three

## Session One

### Parables and The Kingdom

This begins a turning point in The public ministry of Jesus where He no longer speaks plainly to the Israel but instead begins to use parables exclusively in His Teaching. In the last session we begin to see where Israel has begun to reject Jesus, as seen in their attributing the power of Jesus to the devil, and with that Jesus begins to only explain the meaning of the parables to His disciples.

Jesus is still desiring that The Kingdom is received and understood by His own, so that what He has initiated in His Birth and soon Death and Resurrection will continue through the disciples and into the very ends of the Earth.

So we begin to look at what we call the 'Kingdom Parables' in this session which is building towards the death of John The Baptist and some amazing miracles of multiplication and Lordship over creation.

#### The Parable of The Sower

**Matthew 13:1-9** (Mark 4:1-9, Luke 8:4-8)

'On the same day Jesus went out of the house and sat by the sea. And great multitudes were gathered together to Him, so that He got into a boat and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. Then He spoke many things to them in parables, saying: "Behold, a sower went out to sow. And as he sowed, some seed fell by the wayside; and the birds came and devoured them. Some fell on stony places, where they did not have much earth; and they immediately sprang up because they had no depth of earth. But when the sun was up they were scorched, and because they had no root they withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up and choked them. But others fell on good ground and yielded a crop: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!"'

#### -The Seed

1 Peter 1:23 'having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever,' The seed that Jesus is referring here is actually the incorruptible seed of The Word of God which is both The Bible and Himself as He is The Word of God (John 1:1). The seed being sown and not received is actually Jesus Himself and this parable shows us what happens when we don't receive that seed fully in our lives.

## The Purpose of Parables

**Matthew 13:10-17** (Mark 4:10-12, Luke 8:9-10)

'And the disciples came and said to Him, "Why do You speak to them in parables?" He answered and said to them, "Because it has been given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been given. For whoever has, to him more will be given, and he will have abundance; but whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him. Therefore I speak to them in parables, because seeing they do not see, and hearing they do not hear, nor do they understand. And in them the prophecy of Isaiah is fulfilled, which says: 'Hearing you will hear and shall not understand, and seeing you will see and not perceive; For the hearts of this people have grown dull. Their ears are hard of hearing, and their eyes they have closed, lest they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears, lest they should understand with their hearts and turn, So that I should heal them. But blessed are your eyes for they see, and your ears for they hear; or assuredly, I say to you that many prophets and righteous men desired to see what you see, and did not see it, and to hear what you hear, and did not hear it.'"

### -Prophecy Fulfilled

Isaiah 6:9-10 'And He said, "Go, and tell this people: 'Keep on hearing, but do not understand; keep on seeing, but do not perceive.' Make the heart of this people dull, and their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and return and be healed.'"

## The Parable of The Sower Explained

**Matthew 13:18-23** (Mark 4:13-20, Luke 8:11-15)

""Therefore hear the parable of the sower: When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside. But he who received the seed on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. But he who received seed on the good ground is he who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.'"

### -Wayside

This represents a heart that is either not ready to hear The Gospel or a heart that is hardened to the place of not receiving The Gospel.

### -Stony

This represent a heart that receives The Word initially but doesn't make room for the seed to grow and reproduce itself within their lives. There are no roots and they will only last for a short while.



## -Thorns

This represent a heart that receives The Word and begins to let that seed reproduce within them but they also let the worries of life exist in the same space as God and it begins to choke that seed making it unfruitful and stunted.

**-Good Ground**

This represent a heart that receives The Word at once with great joy and makes room within themselves for the seed to grow. They deal with the issues of life and make sure that their heart is tender and pliable in the Hands of God that they would become fruitful for The Kingdom.

## The Parable of The Wheat and The Tares

## Matthew 13:24-30

'Another parable He put forth to them, saying: "The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field; but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat and went his way. But when the grain had sprouted and produced a crop, then the tares also appeared. So the servants of the owner came and said to him, 'Sir, did you not sow good seed in your field? How then does it have tares?' He said to them, 'An enemy has done this.' The servants said to him, 'Do you want us then to go and gather them up?' But he said, 'No, lest while you gather up the tares you also uproot the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest, and at the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, "First gather together the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them, but gather the wheat into my barn." ' ' ' "

## -Wheat or Tare

This parable is the first of four unique to Matthew in this one chapter and bring out what could be seen as an eschatological truth for us to understand which we will look at in the explanation of the parable by Jesus. The only way you can tell the difference between a wheat and tare is when they are fully matured and ready to be harvested as when they are growing they look identical. This means we need to make sure that we have eyes that don't just observe the natural but are in fact anchored in The Spirit so we can see who we are really surrounded by in our lives.

## The Parable of The Mustard Seed

**Matthew 13:31-32** (Mark 4:30-32, Luke 13:18-19)

'Another parable He put forth to them, saying: "The kingdom of heaven is like a mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field, which indeed is the least of all the seeds; but when it is grown it is greater than the herbs and becomes a tree, so that the birds of the air come and nest in its branches."

### **-Mustard Seeds**

There are many different opinions on this parable throughout church teaching and history as to whether this parable is about the increase of God's Kingdom or the increase of mixture within the church. But the genius of God is on subtle display here in the midst of this parable to give us clues as to its meaning. The Mustard plant comes from Cruciferae family of plants (which means cross bearing plant) as the leaves look like a cross from above. The mustard seed is also the only seed that will not cross pollinate with any other plant/s. Both of these natural clues unveil the reality of this parable pointing to The Cross as the entry point of God's Kingdom and that the substance of The Cross will not be mixed or compromised as The Kingdom continues to grow in the Earth.

### **The Parable of The Leaven**

#### **Matthew 13:33** (Luke 13:20-21)

'Another parable He spoke to them: "The kingdom of heaven is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal till it was all leavened.'"

#### **-The Issue of Leaven**

Now everywhere else we see leaven being used in the Scriptures it is seen as sin and negative symbol. So how do we understand what Jesus is saying here? The key to understanding this parable is found in Romans 5:15 'But the free gift is not like the offense. For if by the one man's offense many died, much more the grace of God and the gift by the grace of the one Man, Jesus Christ, abounded to many.' Jesus is using the image of the spreading and contaminating nature of leaven (the offense) as a reference to point to show us that as much as leaven spreads and changes what it comes into contact with, The Kingdom (the gift) will have a transformative and spreading effect that will far eclipse the offenses ability to reproduce itself and is of a different order completely.

### **Prophecy and Parables**

#### **Matthew 13:34-35**

'All these things Jesus spoke to the multitude in parables; and without a parable He did not speak to them, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying: "I will open My mouth in parables; I will utter things kept secret from the foundation of the world.'"

#### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Psalms 78:2 'I will open my mouth in a parable; I will utter dark sayings of old,'

### **The Parable of The Tares Explained**

#### **Matthew 13:36-43**

'Then Jesus sent the multitude away and went into the house. And His disciples came to Him, saying, "Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field." He answered and said to them: "He who sows the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world, the good seeds are the sons of the kingdom, but the tares are the sons of the wicked one. The enemy who sowed them is the devil, the harvest is the end

of the age, and the reapers are the angels. Therefore as the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so it will be at the end of this age. The Son of Man will send out His angels, and they will gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and those who practice lawlessness, and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!"

### **-The End of The Age**

As Jesus begins to unpack this parable to the disciples He begins to unveil a dynamic that was not only being played out in the early church but is an increasing reality even now. The sons of the Kingdom are maturing and increasing as the age unfolds but there are also the sons of the wicked one who are growing and maturing as well. See not everyone is a son or daughter of God as it takes being born again for people to become adopted in and that means that there is also another fatherhood at work in the world right now and this is the counterfeit fatherhood of the devil. His dominion will grow alongside the Kingdom (that's what the wheat and tares is all about) and in the midst of Great Glory we will also see gross darkness alongside of it (Isaiah 60:1-2). This isn't a defeatist position by no means but it is a roadmap for us to be able to navigate the days that are ahead knowing that Jesus has foretold the realities we will walk through as an end-time church and His Ultimate Victory!

## **The Parable of The Hidden Treasure**

### **Matthew 13:44**

"Again, the kingdom of heaven is like treasure hidden in a field, which a man found and hid; and for joy over it he goes and sells all that he has and buys that field."

### **-Treasure**

This is second parable unique to Matthew in this chapter and it has an interesting cultural context. If the treasure was found by a worker in the field then the treasure would belong to the master of the field. This is why the man in parable bought the whole field as he would then legally be able to own that treasure. This shows us that Jesus paid for all things because of the value that Jesus has for us as the treasure and it is also a parable about finding The Kingdom and the one who finds it gives all they have to possess it (Matthew 10:39).

## **The Parable of The Pearl of Great Price**

### **Matthew 13:45-46**

"Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a merchant seeking beautiful pearls, who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had and bought it."

### **-The Price Paid**

This is the third parable unique to Matthew in this chapter and it shows us a very interesting truth. That the price paid for the pearl was far greater than it was worth except for in the eyes of the merchant. This shows us how much value Jesus has for us and greater still, how much He is Worth (Revelation 5:9).

## **The Parable of The Net**

### **Matthew 13:47-52**

“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like a dragnet that was cast into the sea and gathered some of every kind, which, when it was full, they drew to shore; and they sat down and gathered the good into vessels, but threw the bad away. So it will be at the end of the age. The angels will come forth, separate the wicked from among the just, and cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth.” Jesus said to them, “Have you understood all these things?” They said to Him, “Yes, Lord.” Then He said to them, “Therefore every scribe instructed concerning the kingdom of heaven is like a householder who brings out of his treasure things new and old.”

### **-The Harvest**

This is the fourth parable unique to Matthew in this chapter and it is pointing to the harvest at the end of the age. The angels will come and harvest (Revelation 14:14-20) both the just and the wicked and the wicked shall be burned in the fire. Harvest has been a theme all through The Scriptures and as with the wheat and tares, once it has been brought in there is no more time to change from wicked to just. There will be a time limit on accessing salvation and once it is up there is no longer the ability to be saved.

### **-New and Old**

Jesus uses a very specific term here after He asks the disciples if they understood the parables. He makes mention of ‘scribes’ to point them to the reality that once they have understanding they are responsible to teach (that is one of the functions of a scribe) to those who do not. They are to bring out treasures both new (The New Testament) and old (The Old Testament) to explain and unpack the kingdom (Hebrews 10:7).

## **Rejected**

### **Matthew 13:53-58** (Mark 6:1-6, Luke 4:16-30)

‘Now it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, that He departed from there. When He had come to His own country, He taught them in their synagogue, so that they were astonished and said, “Where did this Man get this wisdom and these mighty works? Is this not the carpenter’s son? Is not His mother called Mary? And His brothers James, Joses, Simon, and Judas? And His sisters, are they not all with us? Where then did this Man get all these things?” So they were offended at Him. But Jesus said to them, “A prophet is not without honor except in his own country and in his own house.” Now He did not do many mighty works there because of their unbelief.’

### **-Honor**

Now Galilee is known as the country of unbelief after this passage of Scripture but it wasn’t their unbelief that positioned them to not receive initially, it was a lack of honor. Because they were too familiar with Him, they didn’t see Him rightly and therefore didn’t honor him. A lack of honor for the anointing of God on someones life can position you to be unable to receive the breakthrough that that vessel might be carrying for you. Therefore Jesus couldn’t do many mighty works except for those who honored him.

## **John The Baptist Beheaded**

**Matthew 14:1-12** (Mark 6:14-29, Luke 9:7-9)

'At that time Herod the tetrarch heard the report about Jesus and said to his servants, "This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead, and therefore these powers are at work in him." For Herod had laid hold of John and bound him, and put him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife. Because John had said to him, "It is not lawful for you to have her." And although he wanted to put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet. But when Herod's birthday was celebrated, the daughter of Herodias danced before them and pleased Herod. Therefore he promised with an oath to give her whatever she might ask. So she, having been prompted by her mother, said, "Give me John the Baptist's head here on a platter." And the king was sorry; nevertheless, because of the oaths and because of those who sat with him, he commanded it to be given to her. So he sent and had John beheaded in prison. And his head was brought on a platter and given to the girl, and she brought it to her mother. Then his disciples came and took away the body and buried it, and went and told Jesus.'

### **-Assignment Complete**

John's ministry was complete and he had fulfilled his assignment in preparing the way for Jesus but he was still proclaiming the righteousness of God to those who would listen. He was in prison for rebuking Herod for having his brother wife and calling out the standard's of God (and most likely did this public and repeatedly) and this caused no small stir. Herodias daughter had provocatively danced for all of Herod's guests and it so pleased Herod that he made a rash promise of reward. John fate was sealed as he had opposed this union and Herodias made sure to silence her most vocal detractor in beheading John.

## **Feeding The Five Thousand**

**Matthew 14:13-21** (Mark 6:30-44, Luke 9:10-17, John 6:1-14)

'When Jesus heard it, He departed from there by boat to a deserted place by Himself. But when the multitudes heard it, they followed Him on foot from the cities. And when Jesus went out He saw a great multitude; and He was moved with compassion for them, and healed their sick. When it was evening, His disciples came to Him, saying, "This is a deserted place, and the hour is already late. Send the multitudes away, that they may go into the villages and buy themselves food." But Jesus said to them, "They do not need to go away. You give them something to eat." And they said to Him, "We have here only five loaves and two fish." He said, "Bring them here to Me." Then He commanded the multitudes to sit down on the grass. And He took the five loaves and the two fish, and looking up to heaven, He blessed and broke and gave the loaves to the disciples; and the disciples gave to the multitudes. So they all ate and were filled, and they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments that remained. Now those who had eaten were about five thousand men, besides women and children. '

### **-Multiplication**

There is a truth being demonstrated here when it comes to multiplication and God's Economy. In order for Jesus to bring increase it requires that we give it completely to Him (and not hold back a portion for a rainy day) and that when He has it in His Hands, then He can bless it and multiply it for much fruitfulness in The Kingdom

### **-More Than Enough**

As Jesus broke the bread and the fish He then handed over the miracle to the disciples hands. They were the ones who kept breaking and distributing the fish and loaves and it was multiplying in their own hands. Now if they had just fed everyone enough for the meal that would have been miraculous enough, but it went even further than that, there were twelve baskets full of bread and fish left over! God is not wasteful but He Is Abundant! The actual number of people who were fed was most likely between 15,000-20,000 people as only the men were listed in the 5,000 mentioned.

### **Jesus Walks on Water**

**Matthew 14:22-33** (Mark 6:42-52, John 6:15-21)

'Immediately Jesus made His disciples get into the boat and go before Him to the other side, while He sent the multitudes away. And when He had sent the multitudes away, He went up on the mountain by Himself to pray. Now when evening came, He was alone there. But the boat was now in the middle of the sea, tossed by the waves, for the wind was contrary. Now in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went to them, walking on the sea. And when the disciples saw Him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, "It is a ghost!" And they cried out for fear. But immediately Jesus spoke to them, saying, "Be of good cheer! It is I; do not be afraid." And Peter answered Him and said, "Lord, if it is You, command me to come to You on the water." So He said, "Come." And when Peter had come down out of the boat, he walked on the water to go to Jesus. But when he saw that the wind was boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink he cried out, saying, "Lord, save me!" And immediately Jesus stretched out His hand and caught him, and said to him, "O you of little faith, why did you doubt?" And when they got into the boat, the wind ceased. Then those who were in the boat came and worshiped Him, saying, "Truly You are the Son of God.'"

### **-Gift of Faith**

Here we see an amazing visual representation of how the Gift of Faith operates. When Peter asks "Lord, if it is You, command me to come to You on the water." and Jesus responds by simply saying "Come" there was a release of the Gift of Faith in the words of Jesus that would enable Peter to walk on the water. The Gift of Faith that is listed in 1 Corinthians 12:9 is actually The Faith of God (God's confidence in His Own Ability) that is released for a specific purpose and task to enable a believer to see the miraculous outcome that God has purposed. As it says in Romans 12:17 'So then faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.' so in the command of Jesus, faith was released that was not lacking for the situation but when Peter began to look at the circumstances, the faith that was released was stepped out from and Peter was left with his own measure of faith. This is why Jesus rebukes him for his little faith as these kind of miracles require Gods Faith and He is more than Willing to meet the need.

### **The Hem of His Garment**

**Matthew 14:34-36** (Mark 6:53-56)

'When they had crossed over, they came to the land of Gennesaret. And when the men of that place recognized Him, they sent out into all that surrounding region, brought to Him all who were sick, and begged Him that they might only touch the hem of His garment. And as many as touched it were made perfectly well.'

### **-Authority**

In the Middle Eastern culture the hem of the garment was the place where insignia, authority and even genealogy was displayed and the patterns woven into the hem would be pressed into clay as a seal of identity in a business transaction. It is prophetic of the Authority of God as it says in Ezekiel 16:8 'Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swore unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord GOD, and thou becamest mine.'<sup>2</sup> when He brings Israel under His Authority (Hem/Skirt). So when the people touched the hem of Jesus Garment they were pulling on His Authority and honoring Who He was and therefore received their Healing.'

---

<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *The Holy Bible*, King James Version. New York: American Bible Society: 1999; Bartleby.com, 2000





# Matthew: Week Three

## Session Two

### The Christ

We begin this session with Jesus continuing to unpack the reality of the heart as rebuke towards the Scribes and Pharisees and we also begin to see Jesus touching the Gentiles with The Gospel as Israel's rejection of Him continues to grow. But the one turning point that is so vital in this midst of these chapters is Peter's revelation of Jesus being The Christ, the appointed Messiah and Peter even sees Jesus's Divinity in that moment. This brings all of them closer to the approaching Atoning Sacrifice of Jesus as the days before them a fewer than the ones they have already walked together.

We finish up this session with one of the most powerful and unique moments in The Gospels when Jesus is transfigured before Peter, James and John and they hear The Voice of The Father coming out of heaven. Not to mention fish that have money in their mouths to pay for taxes, maybe that's why fishing is so popular in Pennsylvania...

### Defilement from Within

#### Matthew 15:1-20 (Mark 7:1-23)

'Then the scribes and Pharisees who were from Jerusalem came to Jesus, saying, "Why do Your disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? For they do not wash their hands when they eat bread." He answered and said to them, "Why do you also transgress the commandment of God because of your tradition? For God commanded, saying, 'Honor your father and your mother'; and, 'He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.' But you say, 'Whoever says to his father or mother, "Whatever profit you might have received from me is a gift to God"—then he need not honor his father or mother.' Thus you have made the commandment of God of no effect by your tradition. Hypocrites! Well did Isaiah prophesy about you, saying: 'These people draw near to Me with their mouth, and honor Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. And in vain they worship Me, teaching as doctrines the commandments of men.' " When He had called the multitude to Himself, He said to them, "Hear and understand: Not what goes into the mouth defiles a man; but what comes out of the mouth, this defiles a man." Then His disciples came and said to Him, "Do You know that the Pharisees were offended when they heard this saying?" But He answered and said, "Every plant which My heavenly Father has not planted will be uprooted. Let them alone. They are blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind leads the blind, both will fall into a ditch." Then Peter answered and said to Him, "Explain this parable to us." So Jesus said, "Are you also still without understanding? Do you not yet understand that whatever enters the mouth goes into the stomach and is eliminated? But those things which proceed out of the mouth

come from the heart, and they defile a man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies. These are the things which defile a man, but to eat with unwashed hands does not defile a man.”

### **-Ceremonial Washing**

Now up until this point Jesus ministry had been in and around Galilee but The Pharisees and Scribes had sent a delegation from Jerusalem to Jesus most likely in an attempt to catch Him breaking the law. The washing that they are referencing here when trying to call out Jesus disciples, is not a matter of Mosaic Law but in fact one of the many traditions that the Pharisees had built as a hedge around The Law according to their own traditions. Jesus responds to their objection about their traditions by pointing out their violating of The Law and hypocrisy. They were more concerned with their traditions than they were in obeying The Law as Jesus pointed out when it came to honoring parents (Exodus 20:12) and the tradition they created in order to get around obeying The Law. Traditions are not bad in and of themselves but when they become elevated above God's Word we have idolatry and all kinds of issues as a by-product.

### **-The Heart**

Jesus bring us back to the inner world of mankind once again as He brings everything that mankind is dealing with in terms of sin and conflict back to the heart. The Pharisees were more concerned with outward appearance and traditions than they were the real issues. People by default look at the outward man but Jesus is pointing us back to the truth that it is God who looks at the heart (1 Samuel 16:7) and it is from the heart that all of life flows (Proverbs 4:23) both the good and bad.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 29:13 'Therefore the Lord said: "Inasmuch as these people draw near with their mouths and honor Me with their lips, but have removed their hearts far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the commandment of men,"

## **The Children's Bread**

### **Matthews 15:21-28 (Mark 7:24-30)**

'Then Jesus went out from there and departed to the region of Tyre and Sidon. And behold, a woman of Canaan came from that region and cried out to Him, saying, "Have mercy on me, O Lord, Son of David! My daughter is severely demon-possessed." But He answered her not a word. And His disciples came and urged Him, saying, "Send her away, for she cries out after us." But He answered and said, "I was not sent except to the lost sheep of the house of Israel." Then she came and worshiped Him, saying, "Lord, help me!" But He answered and said, "It is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the little dogs." And she said, "Yes, Lord, yet even the little dogs eat the crumbs which fall from their masters' table." Then Jesus answered and said to her, "O woman, great is your faith! Let it be to you as you desire." And her daughter was healed from that very hour.'

### **-Canaanite Woman**

Tyre and Sidon were actually Gentile towns and the woman here is named as a Canaanite, which makes her an enemy of Israel by descent. What is so amazing about this encounter is the fact she calls Him 'Lord, Son of David' a term used for the Messiah. So far in the Gospel of Matthew the only people to recognize Him as the 'Son of David' were blind men and a Canaanite woman, those who couldn't see and one who was counted as an enemy. It's the humility that she approaches Jesus with that causes her to see Him as He Is and in reverse it was the pride of those who claimed to know that caused them to not see.

### **-The Bread of Deliverance**

We have taught that healing is the children's bread and that isn't incorrect as healing and the demonic are often connected, but the children's bread that Jesus is referring to here is actually the bread of deliverance. It is every child of God's birth right and food to be delivered from demonic oppression and influence and Jesus Himself is that bread for us.

## **Healing The Multitudes**

### **Matthew 15:29-31 (Mark 7:31-37)**

'Jesus departed from there, skirted the Sea of Galilee, and went up on the mountain and sat down there. Then great multitudes came to Him, having with them the lame, blind, mute, maimed, and many others; and they laid them down at Jesus' feet, and He healed them. So the multitude marveled when they saw the mute speaking, the maimed made whole, the lame walking, and the blind seeing; and they glorified the God of Israel.'

### **-Creative Miracles**

We see in this passage of Scripture such a powerful healing outpouring that it would be easy to gloss over the details in these three verses. Great multitudes (that means it was a lot of people!) came to Him for healing, and every kind of miracle followed as a result including the maimed (this is the only place these kinds of miracles are named specifically) receiving creative miracles as the body parts that they were either missing or had been destroyed were recreated and made whole. We are talking about potentially hundreds if not thousands of miracles being released in just these three verses!

## **Feeding The Four Thousand**

### **Matthew 15:32-39 (Mark 8:1-10)**

'Now Jesus called His disciples to Himself and said, "I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now continued with Me three days and have nothing to eat. And I do not want to send them away hungry, lest they faint on the way." Then His disciples said to Him, "Where could we get enough bread in the wilderness to fill such a great multitude?" Jesus said to them, "How many loaves do you have?" And they said, "Seven, and a few little fish." So He commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground. And He took the seven loaves and the fish and gave thanks, broke them and gave them to His

disciples; and the disciples gave to the multitude. So they all ate and were filled, and they took up seven large baskets full of the fragments that were left. Now those who ate were four thousand men, besides women and children. And He sent away the multitude, got into the boat, and came to the region of Magdala.'

### **-Feeding The Gentiles**

The region where this miracle as well as the healing outpouring took place was actually apart of the outskirts of The Decapolis (which is a Gentile region). This marks a distinct difference in the ministry of Jesus as He begins to meet the Gentiles where they're at as the rejection of Israel has already begun to take place.

### **-Seven**

Whereas the feeding of the five thousand (more like 15,000-20,000) had an overflow of twelve baskets full of loaves and fishes, which is a very significant number to Israel, this feeding of the four thousand (more like 12,000-16,000) had seven baskets of leftovers. This is of particular significance as it is the number of completeness and perfection showing us that the fulness of what Jesus was purchasing would not only be for Israel but would be made complete with the Gentiles coming in as well (Ephesians 2:11-18).

## **Pharisees and Sadducees Seek a Sign**

**Matthew 16:1-4** (Mark 8:11-13, Luke 12:54-56)

'Then the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and testing Him asked that He would show them a sign from heaven. He answered and said to them, "When it is evening you say, 'It will be fair weather, for the sky is red'; and in the morning, 'It will be foul weather today, for the sky is red and threatening.' Hypocrites! You know how to discern the face of the sky, but you cannot discern the signs of the times. A wicked and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, and no sign shall be given to it except the sign of the prophet Jonah." And He left them and departed.'

### **-The Sons of Issachar**

Now there was a particular group of people that God made sure to establish in the founding of Israel and that was The Sons of Issachar. This group had the function of knowing the times spiritually so that Israel as a whole would know the way in which they should go, in following after God. 1 Chronicles 12:32 'of the sons of Issachar who had understanding of the times, to know what Israel ought to do, their chiefs were two hundred; and all their brethren were at their command;' This function was placed in Israel by God Himself and this is what Jesus is addressing here when He says "You know how to discern the face of the sky, but you cannot discern the signs of the times." as they had substituted spiritual knowledge for natural knowledge and were now no longer able to sense and know the opportunity that was standing in front of them in The Spirit.

## The Leaven of The Pharisees and Sadducees

**Matthew 16:5-12** (Mark 8:14-21)

'Now when His disciples had come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread. Then Jesus said to them, "Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees." And they reasoned among themselves, saying, "It is because we have taken no bread." But Jesus, being aware of it, said to them, "O you of little faith, why do you reason among yourselves because you have brought no bread? Do you not yet understand, or remember the five loaves of the five thousand and how many baskets you took up? Nor the seven loaves of the four thousand and how many large baskets you took up? How is it you do not understand that I did not speak to you concerning bread?—but to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." Then they understood that He did not tell them to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees.'

### -The Doctrine of The Pharisees and Sadducees

Now for these two camps to be working together is quite an unusual thing as they held very different beliefs concerning The Law, resurrection, angels and more. The Pharisees were the conservatives of the day and took things very seriously and were very rigid in their traditions. The Sadducees were the liberals of the time and were very logical and didn't believe in angels, the resurrection and many such spiritual matters. They are working together towards a common goal, and that is the removal of Jesus. He is warning His disciples against the leaven of both of these camps as once they accept even a part of these doctrines they will begin to spread and contaminate the rest of their beliefs the same way that leaven quietly and slowly spreads through the batch it is introduced to.

## The Christ

**Matthew 16:13-20** (Mark 8:27-30, Luke 9:18-20)

'When Jesus came into the region of Caesarea Philippi, He asked His disciples, saying, "Who do men say that I, the Son of Man, am?" So they said, "Some say John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" Simon Peter answered and said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." Jesus answered and said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven. And I also say to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. And I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." Then He commanded His disciples that they should tell no one that He was Jesus **the Christ**.'

**Χριστός**

Strong's G5547

Christós, khris-tos'; from G5548; anointed, i.e. the Messiah, an epithet of Jesus:—Christ.

-Christ was [and is] the Messiah, the Son of God.

### **-The Anointed One**

Peters response to Jesus question is very specific and had to be a revelation from The Spirit as it was not by natural means that could have seen this. He responds with 'The Christ' which is a very specific term used only for the Messiah but also it describes His Function as being smeared with The Virtue and Substance of God as thats what anointed means.

### **-The Rock**

This particular statement made by Jesus has been used in a variety of ways to justify leadership structures and doctrines within certain church movements as to make Peter the rock that Jesus is speaking of. Now that is inconsistent with the symbol of the rock which is used throughout the Scriptures in reference to Jesus (1 Corinthians 3:11, 10:4) and the truth that the only foundation that can be built upon is Jesus Himself. He is the Rock as the Christ that the church will be built upon by Jesus Himself through the work of The Holy Spirit.

### **-The Keys of The Kingdom**

Binding and loosing are one of the most powerful tools in the believers tool belt and sadly also one of the least used tools in the modern church. These two things are THE KEYS of the Kingdom and are so vital to seeing The Anointing of God released into the earth that we need to make sure we grow in a more developed understanding of their function. There are a lot of things that we permit in our lives because we do not bind them and there are a lot things missing from our lives because we haven't loosed them into the situation. This simple truth will be of vital importance in the days ahead as we progress into The Return of Christ.

## **Jesus Prophecies His Death and Resurrection**

### **Matthew 16:21-23** (Mark 8:31-33, Luke 9:21-22)

'From that time Jesus began to show to His disciples that He must go to Jerusalem, and suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised the third day. Then Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him, saying, "Far be it from You, Lord; this shall not happen to You!" But He turned and said to Peter, "Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men."'

### **-Carnal Thinking**

Peter is famous for putting his foot in his mouth. He is consistently full of zeal yet lacking the wisdom to simply keep his mouth zipped. But even with Peters constant mis-spoken words Jesus response here would seem disproportionate if He wasn't actually teaching us a deeper truth. Jesus says to Peter "Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, for you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men." as He is showing us that the mind of man is in fact demonically inspired (Romans 8:7) part from the Spirit of God.

## Deny Yourself

**Matthew 16:24-28** (Mark 8:34-38, Luke 9:23-26)

'Then Jesus said to His disciples, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake will find it. For what profit is it to a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of Man will come in the glory of His Father with His angels, and then He will reward each according to his works.'

### -Daily

Whilst this isn't expressed here in Matthew it is recorded in Luke 9:23 that denying yourself and taking up your cross is a daily reality. 'Then He said to them all, "If anyone desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow Me.'" This becomes the lifestyle of a believer as the old man with his desires and ways of thinking will need to be put off continually (Ephesians 4:22) in order to become renewed in the spirit of our minds (Ephesians 4:23).

### -Rewards

As New Testament believers we live in this tension of the Kingdom now and not yet, as the Kingdom is within (Luke 17:21) but will be established worldwide and in its fulness in Jesus Return. With that dynamic at play we need to make sure that we do not lose sight of the reality of our eternal hope and with that, the rewards that come with being With Him in the fulness of the resurrection and our dwelling forever with Him. We do have a mandate to establish the Kingdom now but we need to not lose sight of our true Home which will be with Him at the end of the age.

## The Transfiguration

**Matthew 17:1-13** (Mark 9:1-13, Luke 9:27-36)

"Assuredly, I say to you, there are some standing here who shall not taste death till they see the Son of Man coming in His kingdom." Now after six days Jesus took Peter, James, and John his brother, led them up on a high mountain by themselves; and He was transfigured before them. His face shone like the sun, and His clothes became as white as the light. And behold, Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Him. Then Peter answered and said to Jesus, "Lord, it is good for us to be here; if You wish, let us make here three tabernacles: one for You, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and suddenly a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hear Him!" And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces and were greatly afraid. But Jesus came and touched them and said, "Arise, and do not be afraid." When they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus only. Now as they came down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, "Tell the vision to no one until the Son of Man is risen from the dead." And His disciples asked Him, saying, "Why then do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?" Jesus answered and said to them, "Indeed, Elijah is coming first and will restore all things. But I say to you that Elijah has come already, and they did not know him but did to him whatever they wished. Likewise the Son of Man is also about to suffer at their hands." Then the disciples understood that He spoke to them of John the Baptist.'

### **-Moses and Elijah**

Now this is one of the most unusual moments in The Gospels. We have Jesus not only meeting with Moses and Elijah, as they represent The Law and The Prophets of which Jesus is the fulfillment (Matthew 5:17), but we have Jesus as the Eternal Christ transfiguring Himself into the glorified form that He had left behind when He came as a bondservant (Philippians 2:5-8). You would think that this dramatic miracle would be tall evidence that people would need to be able to receive Him if they were told about it, but Jesus actually instructs the disciples to tell no-one until after His Resurrection. He doesn't want people to know Him in His Glory until they have received Him in His Humility and Servanthood.

### **-The Spirit of Elijah**

Now we know that John came in the spirit and the power of Elijah (Luke 1:17) with the mandate to prepare the way for Messiah and therefore return Israel back to God (Malachi 4:6) and if they had truly received John it would have been a dramatically different outcome for Israel than what they had to walk out due to their rejection of John and ultimately Jesus.

## **Unbelief**

### **Matthew 17:14-21** (Mark 9:14-29, Luke 9:37-42)

'And when they had come to the multitude, a man came to Him, kneeling down to Him and saying, "Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is an epileptic and suffers severely; for he often falls into the fire and often into the water. So I brought him to Your disciples, but they could not cure him." Then Jesus answered and said, "O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I bear with you? Bring him here to Me." And Jesus rebuked the demon, and it came out of him; and the child was cured from that very hour. Then the disciples came to Jesus privately and said, "Why could we not cast it out?" So Jesus said to them, "Because of your unbelief; for assuredly, I say to you, if you have faith as a mustard seed, you will say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move; and nothing will be impossible for you. However, this kind does not go out except by prayer and fasting.'"

### **-Prayer and Fasting**

Jesus is reiterating the need for prayer and fasting once again (as He laid these two as foundational to the Kingdom in Matthew 6:1-18) but He is bringing them into a new function and purpose. That prayer and fasting would also not only be a place of intimacy in the secret place with The Father, but they would also be the avenue for The Father to be able to remove the hinderance of unbelief from the heart of a believer. Prayer and fasting in this manner will actually soften us to The Fathers Work in such a way that He can do the work of a master surgeon in cutting away and removing all of the internal issues that have caused the release of The Kingdom to be come stifled in the life of a believer.

### **-Faithless and Perverse Generation**

This statement made by Jesus is very much a reference point to the song of Moses (Deuteronomy 32:5-6). It is a key indicator of the generation of His first coming and will be an increased reality in the days leading up to His Return (Matthew 24:12).



## **Jesus Prophecies Again**

**Matthew 17:22-23** (Mark 9:30-32, Luke 9:43-45)

'Now while they were staying in Galilee, Jesus said to them, "The Son of Man is about to be betrayed into the hands of men, and they will kill Him, and the third day He will be raised up." And they were exceedingly sorrowful.'

### **-Two or Three Witnesses**

This is the second time that Jesus prophesies His Own Death and Resurrection to His disciples, this is inline with the 'two or three witnesses' that were required to establish every matter (Deuteronomy 19:15-21). He adds a new facet here, that He will be betrayed. Which shows that it will be from one who is close to Him as you can't be betrayed by someone you don't know or have no affection for.

## **The Tax Fish**

**Matthew 17:24-27**

'When they had come to Capernaum, those who received the temple tax came to Peter and said, "Does your Teacher not pay the temple tax?" He said, "Yes." And when he had come into the house, Jesus anticipated him, saying, "What do you think, Simon? From whom do the kings of the earth take customs or taxes, from their sons or from strangers?" Peter said to Him, "From strangers." Jesus said to him, "Then the sons are free. Nevertheless, lest we offend them, go to the sea, cast in a hook, and take the fish that comes up first. And when you have opened its mouth, you will find a piece of money; take that and give it to them for Me and you.'"

### **-Son or a Servant**

Jesus responds to Peter asking a very normal question for the day regarding tax and here we see Jesus point to a spiritual reality in the midst of a natural situation. Jesus was showing Peter that He was The Son and wasn't required by His Father to pay a tax that wasn't a part of the Law, but He is also showing us that when we become sons we also have the same standing before The Father. Once again Jesus is once again pointing the way to redemption as He pays the price for another.



# Matthew: Week Four

## Session One

### Offenses and Greatness

In this session we will see the ministry of Jesus shift from being proclaimed in the region of Galilee as He moves into the region of Judea which is going to continue to set the stage for Him to come into Jerusalem as The Promised King and Messiah. Jesus continues to teach in parables to the public and begins to unpack the right way to resolve relational issues, marriage and divorce, servanthood and the cost of following Him.

Jesus has no problem getting to the real issues of life with the disciples as they want to know what greatness looks like, how forgiveness works and He also meets a young man whose wealth will be his stumbling block to following Him. Offense is going to come and Jesus wants to make sure that His Disciples are not unaware of the cost of unforgiveness as He is determined to teach everything that The Father has placed within Him even in the midst of rejection and hardships.

#### The Greatest

**Matthew 18:1-5** (Mark 9:33-37, Luke 9:46-48)

'At that time the disciples came to Jesus, saying, "Who then is greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" Then Jesus called a little child to Him, set him in the midst of them, and said, "Assuredly, I say to you, unless you are converted and become as little children, you will by no means enter the kingdom of heaven. Therefore whoever humbles himself as this little child is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven. Whoever receives one little child like this in My name receives Me.'"

#### -Greatness is Childlikeness

You would think that Jesus would have rebuked this desire for greatness in the disciples but instead Jesus actually gives them a new definition of what greatness really looks like. Greatness in the Kingdom isn't defined by natural strength or wisdom but is in fact found in childlike wonder and dependancy. To be great is to empty yourself of your own ability, wisdom and strength and like a child depend on your Father for all things.

#### Offenses

**Matthew 18:6-9** (Mark 9:42-48, Luke 17:1-2)

"'But whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in Me to sin, it would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Woe to the world

because of offenses! For offenses must come, but woe to that man by whom the offense comes! If your hand or foot causes you to sin, cut it off and cast it from you. It is better for you to enter into life lame or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet, to be cast into the everlasting fire. And if your eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and cast it from you. It is better for you to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire.”

### **-Sin Is No Small Matter**

Offenses and sin will come and that is a fact. There is a coming showdown between the dominion of darkness and The Kingdom of God and as that progresses offense and sin will be on the rise. Jesus is making sure that His disciples (and in turn us) understand that the culture around us will continue to progress into darkness but we need to make sure that we are stewarding the children amongst us as they will believe whatever they are told and see as normal. For someone to teach the little children that sin is normal is so serious to the heart of Jesus that it would be better for that person ‘if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were drowned in the depth of the sea.’ as the innocence of children is of high value to God. For the Kingdom belongs to such as these.

### **The Parable of The Lost Sheep**

#### **Matthew 18:10-14 (Luke 15:1-7)**

“Take heed that you do not despise one of these little ones, for I say to you that in heaven their angels always see the face of My Father who is in heaven. For the Son of Man has come to save that which was lost. What do you think? If a man has a hundred sheep, and one of them goes astray, does he not leave the ninety-nine and go to the mountains to seek the one that is straying? And if he should find it, assuredly, I say to you, he rejoices more over that sheep than over the ninety-nine that did not go astray. Even so it is not the will of your Father who is in heaven that one of these little ones should perish.”

### **-That Which Was Lost**

In the fall of man there was a great deal of things lost. Mankind lost the image and likeness of God (Genesis 1:27), he became spiritually dead (Genesis 2:17), he lost innocence (Genesis 3:10), he lost dominion (Genesis 1:28) and he lost intimate fellowship with God. Jesus’s Atoning Sacrifice redeemed and restored all these things back to redeemed mankind.

### **Sin Between Brothers**

#### **Matthew 18:15-20**

“Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother. But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that ‘by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.’ And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector. Assuredly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. Again I say to you that if two of you agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in My name, I am there in the midst of them.”

### **-The Right Way**

Divine order is the only way to get divine results. This passage here in Matthew is one of the most important, and most overlooked, instructions in dealing with interpersonal issues within the body. The first point of restoration is to go the person individually and make your case known, then if that doesn't work bring two or three witnesses (there's that pattern again). Then finally if there is no resolve bring it before the church. If there can be no resolve at that level there is a consequence for the brother who will not see his error, he is to be treated as a heathen (unbeliever) or a tax collector. He is still to be loved but has lost his place of fellowship and standing amongst the body. We would see a whole lot more unity in the body if we would follow this pattern for restoration as we would no have issues being gossiped and overlooked in the name of 'unsanctified mercy' and keeping the peace.

### **-The Prayer of Agreement**

Now given that the instructions proceeding this are to do with sin between brothers this would seem a little out of place, except for that dealing with sin is the key issue for coming into agreement. The prayer of agreement isn't just agreeing with one another for the needs being spoken verbally, but it is fact a mixing together of hearts and making one sound in prayer before the Lord. The word for agreement in the Greek is 'symphōneō soom-fo-neh'-o; from G4859; to be harmonious, i.e. (figuratively) to accord (be suitable, concur) or stipulate (by compact):—agree (together, with)' and it's where we get the word symphony from. This shows us that to pray in agreement is to bring different sounds together to make a greater sound together that is received as one prayer before The Lord in the same way an orchestra has many instruments that come together in one song.

## **The Parable of The Unforgiving Servant**

### **Matthew 18:21-35**

'Then Peter came to Him and said, "Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Up to seven times?" Jesus said to him, "I do not say to you, up to seven times, but up to seventy times seven. Therefore the kingdom of heaven is like a certain king who wanted to settle accounts with his servants. And when he had begun to settle accounts, one was brought to him who owed him ten thousand talents. But as he was not able to pay, his master commanded that he be sold, with his wife and children and all that he had, and that payment be made. The servant therefore fell down before him, saying, 'Master, have patience with me, and I will pay you all.' Then the master of that servant was moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt. But that servant went out and found one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred denarii; and he laid hands on him and took him by the throat, saying, 'Pay me what you owe!' So his fellow servant fell down at his feet and begged him, saying, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you all.' And he would not, but went and threw him into prison till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow servants saw what had been done, they were very grieved, and came and told their master all that had been done. Then his master, after he had called him, said to him, 'You wicked servant! I forgave you all that debt because you begged me. Should you not also have had compassion on your fellow servant, just as I had pity on you?' And his master was angry, and delivered him to the torturers until he should pay all that was due to him. So My heavenly Father also will do to you if each of you, from his heart, does not forgive his brother his trespasses.'"

### **-Seven Times**

Now when Peter is asking Jesus how many times do I have to forgive my brother (another foot in mouth moment for Peter) he is trying to show how merciful he is offering to forgive seven times. Jesus responds to Peter with a stunning answer and a parable to show Peter why a lifestyle of forgiveness is so vital to walking in The Kingdom. Without showing forgiveness we cannot receive it.

### **-Talents and Denarii**

Now the amount owed by the first servant is more than we realize. Ten thousand talents would be the equivalent of anywhere between twelve million dollars and a billion, which actually shows us that this debt we have with the Master is unpayable. When the first servant went to his fellow servant who owed a hundred denarii (about a hundred days wages) his response was not even close to being grateful for his own forgiveness and therefore extending mercy. Forgiveness is a much stronger reality and even closer to the heart of Jesus than we can realize, he actually finishes by telling the disciples that if you do not forgive you cannot be forgiven and that is a confronting reality.

## **Marriage and Divorce**

### **Matthew 19:1-10 (Mark 10:1-12)**

'Now it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these sayings, that He departed from Galilee and came to the region of Judea beyond the Jordan. And great multitudes followed Him, and He healed them there. The Pharisees also came to Him, testing Him, and saying to Him, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife for just any reason?" And He answered and said to them, "Have you not read that He who made them at the beginning 'made them male and female, and said, 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh'? So then, they are no longer two but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate." They said to Him, "Why then did Moses command to give a certificate of divorce, and to put her away?" He said to them, "Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, permitted you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so. And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, and marries another, commits adultery; and whoever marries her who is divorced commits adultery." His disciples said to Him, "If such is the case of the man with his wife, it is better not to marry.'"

### **-Moses**

When Moses gave the command in Deuteronomy 24:1-4 regarding divorce Jesus shows us that this was due to Israel's hard hearts that it was allowed and not because it was God's Intended design for mankind. This was an allowance and did not represent God's Heart on the matter as marriage is His Design and reconciliation (where it is possible) is the goal when a marriage comes under fire.

### **-Joined Together**

Because of the lack of character mixed with tremendous gifting in ministers in the day we are in, we have taken a position to emphasize the fruit of The Spirit as being of greater importance and that isn't wrong. Character should always be formed and emphasized in all of God's People. But we need to be careful that we don't separate the Holy Spirit attributes and functions into two different camps as if they were not connected and under value a part of The Godhead. Now this isn't expressly communicated here but

the principle is when Jesus says 'what God has joined together (made one) let no man separate'. It actually takes the Fruit and the Gifts of The Holy Spirit for us to walk in true Kingdom authority and represent Jesus well.

## **Celibacy**

### **Matthew 19:11-12**

'But He said to them, "All cannot accept this saying, but only those to whom it has been given: For there are eunuchs who were born thus from their mother's womb, and there are eunuchs who were made eunuchs by men, and there are eunuchs who have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He who is able to accept it, let him accept it.'"

### **-Singleness**

Now when Jesus make mention of eunuchs He isn't talking about the physical body. He is highlighting that there are some who are called from birth to be single in service of The Gospel and keep themselves in that manner. Marriage is a God given design and it is a part of His Creation, but there are those who will not pursue marriage and we need to honor them in the body as being faithful to their calling and not always looking to marry them off.

## **The Little Children**

### **Matthew 19:13-15** (Mark 10:13-16, Luke 18:15-17)

'Then little children were brought to Him that He might put His hands on them and pray, but the disciples rebuked them. But Jesus said, "Let the little children come to Me, and do not forbid them; for of such is the kingdom of heaven." And He laid His hands on them and departed from there.'

### **-Laying of Hands**

These children had an incredible honor in this moment. For Jesus to lay hand on them and blessing was for them to receive the tangible virtue of God that was resting upon Jesus (Hebrews 6:1-2). Imagine who these kids grew up to be and what kind of impact they had for The Gospel!

## **The Rich Young Ruler**

### **Matthew 19:16-22** (Mark 10:17-22, Luke 18:18-23)

'Now behold, one came and said to Him, "Good Teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?" So He said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good but One, that is, God. But if you want to enter into life, keep the commandments." He said to Him, "Which ones?" Jesus said, "'You shall not murder,' 'You shall not commit adultery,' 'You shall not steal,' 'You shall not bear false witness,' Honor your father and your mother,' and, 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' The young man said to Him, "All these things I have kept from my youth. What do I still lack?" Jesus said to him, "If you want to be perfect, go, sell what you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, follow Me." But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful, for he had great possessions.'

### **-An Interesting Omission**

Now Jesus doesn't list all of the Ten Commandments here but there is one that He doesn't include that actually shows us the condition He is addressing with the rich young ruler. Covetousness and idolatry. Jesus can see that this young man has made money and possessions his idol (Exodus 20:4-5) and for him to follow Jesus he would need to be free of all other heart allegiances and make Jesus his Lord and not his bank account.

### **With God All Things Are Possible**

#### **Mathew 19:23-30**

'Then Jesus said to His disciples, "Assuredly, I say to you that it is hard for a rich man to enter the kingdom of heaven. And again I say to you, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God." When His disciples heard it, they were greatly astonished, saying, "Who then can be saved?" But Jesus looked at them and said to them, "With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible." Then Peter answered and said to Him, "See, we have left all and followed You. Therefore what shall we have?" So Jesus said to them, "Assuredly I say to you, that in the regeneration, when the Son of Man sits on the throne of His glory, you who have followed Me will also sit on twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And everyone who has left houses or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My name's sake, shall receive a hundredfold, and inherit eternal life. But many who are first will be last, and the last first.'"

### **-The Twenty Four Elders**

What a privilege the twelve have in this passage of Scripture as Jesus reveals to them that they will sit on twelve thrones and judge the twelve tribes of Israel in the regeneration (His Millennial Reign). Could it be that they are also afforded the honor of being twelve of the twenty four elders, alongside of the heads of twelve tribes, that we see in Revelation 4:1-11?

### **The Parable of The Workers in The Vineyard**

#### **Matthew 20:1-16**

"For the kingdom of heaven is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard. Now when he had agreed with the laborers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, and said to them, 'You also go into the vineyard, and whatever is right I will give you.' So they went. Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out and found others standing idle, and said to them, 'Why have you been standing here idle all day?' They said to him, 'Because no one hired us.' He said to them, 'You also go into the vineyard, and whatever is right you will receive. So when evening had come, the owner of the vineyard said to his steward, 'Call the laborers and give them their wages, beginning with the last to the first.' And when those came who were hired about the eleventh hour, they each received a denarius. But when the first came, they supposed that they would receive more; and they likewise received each a denarius. And when they had



received it, they complained against the landowner, saying, 'These last men have worked only one hour, and you made them equal to us who have borne the burden and the heat of the day.' But he answered one of them and said, 'Friend, I am doing you no wrong. Did you not agree with me for a denarius? Take what is yours and go your way. I wish to give to this last man the same as to you. Is it not lawful for me to do what I wish with my own things? Or is your eye evil because I am good?' So the last will be first, and the first last. For many are called, but few chosen.'"

### **-Salvation**

The reward of the laborers in this parable is actually quite simple and that is the salvation of our souls. As it is written in 1 Peter 1:3-11 but specifically 1:9 'The end of your faith-the salvation of your souls' shows us that the reward for all who respond to the invitation given by the Owner of the vineyard is the same for all, regardless of their time of labor or effort put in. This shows us the truth that salvation isn't earned through effort or hard work but is in fact a reward that is freely given and the same for all those who have responded to the invitation.

### **Jesus Prophesies a Third Time**

**Matthew 20:17-19** (Mark 10:32-34, Luke 18:31-34)

'Now Jesus, going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples aside on the road and said to them, Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and to the scribes; and they will condemn Him to death, and deliver Him to the Gentiles to mock and to scourge and to crucify. And the third day He will rise again.'"

### **-Two or Three**

Now we see Jesus a third time prophesying His Death and Resurrection (Deuteronomy 19:15) but He reveals a new facet in this prophecy that He didn't previously. That it will be the Gentiles (Romans) that will scourge and crucify Him.

### **Not To Be Served**

**Matthew 20:20-28** (Mark 10:35-45)

'Then the mother of Zebedee's sons came to Him with her sons, kneeling down and asking something from Him. And He said to her, "What do you wish?" She said to Him, "Grant that these two sons of mine may sit, one on Your right hand and the other on the left, in Your kingdom." But Jesus answered and said, "You do not know what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I am about to drink, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?" They said to Him, "We are able." So He said to them, "You will indeed drink My cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with; but to sit on My right hand and on My left is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it is prepared by My Father." And when the ten heard it, they were greatly displeased with the two brothers. But Jesus called them to Himself and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and those who are great exercise authority over them. Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you, let him be your servant. And whoever desires to be first among you, let him be your slave just as the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.'"

### **-Who is at Jesus Right Hand?**

Now whilst this might not be the point that Jesus is communicating here, He is really pointing to that there are things that are under The Father's Authority only (Acts 1:7), it's interesting to note who is already sitting where. Jesus sits at the right hand of The Father (Colossians 3:1) so it begs the question "who is sitting at Jesus Right Hand?"....

### **-Leading is Serving**

Jesus is pointing to 'The world' leading through exerting influence over people and bringing them under themselves as the normal way of leadership. But this isn't the way Jesus Leads or how He expects us to lead. The Kingdom has leaders who serve all and in that the true measure of greatness is seen and experienced by those who are being served and by those who see that kind of leadership being lived out.

## **Two Blind Men**

**Matthew 20:29-34** (Mark 10:46-52, Luke 18:35-43)

'Now as they went out of Jericho, a great multitude followed Him. And behold, two blind men sitting by the road, when they heard that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, "Have mercy on us, O Lord, Son of David!" Then the multitude warned them that they should be quiet; but they cried out all the more, saying, "Have mercy on us, O Lord, Son of David!" So Jesus stood still and called them, and said, "What do you want Me to do for you?" They said to Him, "Lord, that our eyes may be opened." So Jesus had compassion and touched their eyes. And immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed Him.'

### **-Son of David**

These two men actually called Jesus by His Messianic term that is actually directly connected to the miracle that they are in need of receiving. The opening of blind eyes and deaf ears are actually miracles that only the Messiah will be able to perform as it is written in Isaiah 35:5 'Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, And the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped.' They were able to see who He really was even in their blindness that most people with sight couldn't see standing in front of them.

# Matthew: Week Four

## Session Two

### Hosanna

So begins the final week of Jesus life and Ministry as He heads into Jerusalem for the final time. As He enters into the city He is actually presenting Himself as the long awaited King and Messiah and a multitude of people begin to honor and welcome Him by crying out sections of The Day of Messiah Psalm (Psalm 118) and seemingly celebrating His Arrival. This is the moment that Israel has been longing for as their King marches into the city, but He is Not The Lion they were expecting. He is coming as The Lamb and for Israel that was not the King they wanted, but it is the King they needed.

This final week of Jesus life is so important that the majority of The Gospel of John is written about this last week of Jesus life and Ministry. Jesus still has much to teach His Disciples as He Knows His Time is approaching and there are still a few confrontations to be had.

### The Triumphal Entry

**Matthew 21:1-11** (Mark 11:1-10, Luke 19:28-40, John 12:12-19)

'Now when they drew near Jerusalem, and came to Bethphage, at the Mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, saying to them, "Go into the village opposite you, and immediately you will find a donkey tied, and a colt with her. Loose them and bring them to Me. And if anyone says anything to you, you shall say, 'The Lord has need of them,' and immediately he will send them." All this was done that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying: "Tell the daughter of Zion, 'Behold, your King is coming to you, lowly, and sitting on a donkey, a colt, the foal of a donkey.'" So the disciples went and did as Jesus commanded them. They brought the donkey and the colt, laid their clothes on them, and set Him on them. And a very great multitude spread their clothes on the road; others cut down branches from the trees and spread them on the road. Then the multitudes who went before and those who followed cried out, saying: "Hosanna to the Son of David! 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the LORD!' Hosanna in the highest!" And when He had come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, "Who is this?" So the multitudes said, "This is Jesus, the prophet from Nazareth of Galilee."'

### -Hosannah

The people of Jerusalem are actually singing out words from Psalm 118 which is called the Hallel Psalm and is also know as the Psalm of The Day of Messiah. As they are crying out Hosannah they are announcing 'Save we pray' as Jesus is entering into Jerusalem as the King that is prophesied by Zechariah and they are rightfully announcing Jesus's entry, even though they may not understand it, as He will be the King Who Saves but just not in the way the were expecting.

### **-Lamb for Your House**

Now leading up to Passover each household was to take the lamb that would offer up and have it dwell with them for four days before Passover. The exact day that this lamb must be brought in is it written in Exodus 12:3 "'Speak to all the congregation of Israel, saying: 'On the tenth of this month every man shall take for himself a lamb, according to the house of his father, a lamb for a household.'" and this was the very same day that Jesus rode into Jerusalem in the triumphal entry as The True Passover Lamb that would be amongst the house of Jerusalem for four days before His death.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Zechariah 9:9 "'Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion! Shout, O daughter of Jerusalem! Behold, your King is coming to you; He is just and having salvation, lowly and riding on a donkey, a colt, the foal of a donkey.'

Psalms 118:26 'Blessed is he who comes in the name of the LORD! We have blessed you from the house of the LORD.'

### **Jesus Cleanses The Temple**

**Matthew 21:12-17** (Mark 11:15-19, Luke 19:45-48, John 2:13-22)

'Then Jesus went into the temple of God and drove out all those who bought and sold in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who sold doves. And He said to them, "It is written, 'My house shall be called a house of prayer,' but you have made it a 'den of thieves.' " Then the blind and the lame came to Him in the temple, and He healed them. But when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that He did, and the children crying out in the temple and saying, "Hosanna to the Son of David!" they were indignant and said to Him, "Do You hear what these are saying?" And Jesus said to them, "Yes. Have you never read, Out of the mouth of babes and nursing infants you have perfected praise'?"'

### **-The Lion and The Lamb**

As Jesus walks into His Father's house He begins to demonstrate the Lion Nature of who He is as Messiah. This isn't the first time He has cleared out the temple (John 2:13-22) and so you can probably picture the looks on the faces of those who were the first time as Jesus walked in and were probably bracing for a repeat performance. He clears out all of the iniquity in the temple through the money changers and reestablishes His Father's House as a place of prayer and healing. Jesus has the same lion-like posture toward us as His Temples that He will aggressively war against anything within us that is keeping us from walking in the fullness of being a house of prayer and healing.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 56:7 'Even them I will bring to My holy mountain, and make them joyful in My house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and their sacrifices will be accepted on My altar; for My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations.'

Jeremiah 7:11 "'Has this house, which is called by My name, become a den of thieves in your eyes? Behold, I, even I, have seen it," says the LORD.'

Psalms 8:2 'Out of the mouth of babes and nursing infants you have ordained strength, because of Your enemies, that You may silence the enemy and the avenger.'

## **The Fig Tree Withered**

**Matthew 21:18-19** (Mark 11:12-14)

'Now in the morning, as He returned to the city, He was hungry. And seeing a fig tree by the road, He came to it and found nothing on it but leaves, and said to it, "Let no fruit grow on you ever again." Immediately the fig tree withered away.'

### **-Fig Leaves**

The fig leaves prophetically speak to the shame that mankind has been covered in since the fall (Genesis 3:7) and they also represent the work of man to cover his own sin. Jesus was showing that He would curse the very root of the fall in His Death and Resurrection in the same way He Cursed the fig tree.

## **The Fig Tree Explained**

**Matthew 21:20-22** (Mark 11:20-24)

'And when the disciples saw it, they marveled, saying, "How did the fig tree wither away so soon?" So Jesus answered and said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you, if you have faith and do not doubt, you will not only do what was done to the fig tree, but also if you say to this mountain, 'Be removed and be cast into the sea,' it will be done. And whatever things you ask in prayer, believing, you will receive.'"

### **-Believing Believers**

Jesus used this natural miracle to give us an insight into the nature and substance of faith. That if we speak in faith to the mountains in front of us and do not doubt it will be done. We need to become believing believers who walk in faith and have confidence that when ask in prayer it has been released at that very moment that we ask. This isn't a license 'to name it and claim it' but an instruction to show us how faith works and should operate in the life of a believer.

## **The Authority of Jesus**

**Matthew 21:23-27** (Mark 11:27-33, Luke 20:1-8)

'Now when He came into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people confronted Him as He was teaching, and said, "By what authority are You doing these things? And who gave You this authority?" But Jesus answered and said to them, "I also will ask you one thing, which if you tell Me, I likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things: The baptism of John—where was it from? From

heaven or from men?" And they reasoned among themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' He will say to us, 'Why then did you not believe him?' But if we say, 'From men,' we fear the multitude, for all count John as a prophet." So they answered Jesus and said, "We do not know." And He said to them, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things.""

### **-Repentance**

Jesus is a master wordsmith and an incredible tactician. The chief priests are trying to trap Him in His Words but not even realizing that they are setting their own trap. Jesus will tell them what they want to know if they will answer a question that will show everybody where their hearts are really at. If John was sent by God and they admit it why didn't they repent and become baptized? If they say he wasn't sent by God they would lose their power as leaders because the people held that John was sent by God as a prophet. He is giving them an invitation to humble themselves and repent that they missed God but He lets their own inability to humble themselves be their answer and reward.

## **The Parable of The Two Sons**

### **Matthew 21:28-32**

""But what do you think? A man had two sons, and he came to the first and said, 'Son, go, work today in my vineyard.' He answered and said, 'I will not,' but afterward he regretted it and went. Then he came to the second and said likewise. And he answered and said, 'I go, sir,' but he did not go. Which of the two did the will of his father?" They said to Him, "The first." Jesus said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you that tax collectors and harlots enter the kingdom of God before you. For John came to you in the way of righteousness, and you did not believe him; but tax collectors and harlots believed him; and when you saw it, you did not afterward relent and believe him.""

### **-The Way of Righteousness**

This is a parable that is unique to Matthew and it is directed toward Israel in a very subtle way. Jesus is making a reference to Israel being like the second son saying yes to God initially but then not following through, but He is also contrasting them to the tax collectors and harlots who by their lives and choices said no to God but then repented and said yes. This is the way of righteousness that Jesus is talking about in reference to John The Baptist, it is the way of repentance and returning back to God that allows people to walk in the righteousness that has been revealed through Jesus. They saw the fruit of John's Ministry and but wouldn't relent and admit their need. This wouldn't have been received well by the self-righteous Pharisees.

## **The Parable of The Wicked Vinedressers**

### **Matthew 21:33-46** (Mark 12:1-22, Luke 20:9-19)

""Hear another parable: There was a certain landowner who planted a vineyard and set a hedge around it, dug a winepress in it and built a tower. And he leased it to vinedressers and went into a far country. Now when vintage-time drew near, he sent his servants to the vinedressers, that they might receive its fruit. And the vinedressers took his servants, beat one, killed one, and stoned another. Again he sent other servants, more than the first, and they did likewise to them. Then last of all he sent his son to them,

saying, 'They will respect my son.' But when the vinedressers saw the son, they said among themselves, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him and seize his inheritance.' So they took him and cast him out of the vineyard and killed him. Therefore, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those vinedressers?" They said to Him, "He will destroy those wicked men miserably, and lease his vineyard to other vinedressers who will render to him the fruits in their seasons." Jesus said to them, "Have you never read in the Scriptures: The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. This was the LORD's doing, and it is marvelous in our eyes' ? Therefore I say to you, the kingdom of God will be taken from you and given to a nation bearing the fruits of it. And whoever falls on this stone will be broken; but on whomever it falls, it will grind him to powder." Now when the chief priests and Pharisees heard His parables, they perceived that He was speaking of them. But when they sought to lay hands on Him, they feared the multitudes, because they took Him for a prophet.'

### **-The Gospel To The Gentiles**

Jesus is prophesying to the very near future as Israel has already rejected Him as Messiah and He is using this parable to show them their own history of resisting God by killing His servants and messengers when they haven't liked what they have said. That it is because of their constant refusal to acknowledge what God is saying, that what was offered to them will in fact be given to nations that didn't know Him or seek Him (Isaiah 65:1) and we see that beginning to be fulfilled in the scattering of the church after Stephens is martyred (Acts 8:1).

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Psalm 118:22-23 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. This was the LORD's doing; it is marvelous in our eyes.'

## **The Parable of The Wedding Feast**

### **Matthew 22:1-14** (Luke 14:15-24)

'And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables and said: "The kingdom of heaven is like a certain king who arranged a marriage for his son, and sent out his servants to call those who were invited to the wedding; and they were not willing to come. Again, he sent out other servants, saying, 'Tell those who are invited, "See, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and fatted cattle are killed, and all things are ready. Come to the wedding."' ' But they made light of it and went their ways, one to his own farm, another to his business. And the rest seized his servants, treated them spitefully, and killed them. But when the king heard about it, he was furious. And he sent out his armies, destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then he said to his servants, 'The wedding is ready, but those who were invited were not worthy. Therefore go into the highways, and as many as you find, invite to the wedding.' So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all whom they found, both bad and good. And the wedding hall was filled with guests. But when the king came in to see the guests, he saw a man there who did not have on a wedding garment. So he said to him, 'Friend, how did you come in here without a wedding garment?' And he was speechless. Then the king said to the servants, 'Bind him hand and foot, take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.' For many are called, but few are chosen.'"

### **-Clothed in Who's Righteousness?**

Now we come to the parable of the wedding feast which at face value has some very interesting dynamics going on with Jesus continuing to unpack Israel's own history in story form to show them that the invitation to salvation and the Kingdom will be received by others even if they don't receive it. But we have the issue of clothing to unpack here and to do that we need to look at some other verses to understand what is being communicated here. It says in Isaiah 64:6 ' But we are all like an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are like filthy rags; we all fade as a leaf, and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.' and with that our righteousness is as rags (clothes) are not sufficient to cover us in front of a Holy God. The only covering that will keep us in the wedding feast will be if we receive Jesus righteousness as our clothing and covering as it says in Revelation 7:13-14 'Then one of the elders answered, saying to me, "Who are these arrayed in white robes, and where did they come from?" And I said to him, "Sir, you know." So he said to me, "These are the ones who come out of the great tribulation, and washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.' We can not enter into The Kingdom under our own terms and covering, we can only be accepted through The Blood of Jesus.

### **Taxes and Caesar**

**Matthew 22:15-22** (Mark 12:13-16, Luke 20:20-26)

'Then the Pharisees went and plotted how they might entangle Him in His talk. And they sent to Him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, "Teacher, we know that You are true, and teach the way of God in truth; nor do You care about anyone, for You do not regard the person of men. Tell us, therefore, what do You think? Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not?" But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, "Why do you test Me, you hypocrites? Show Me the tax money." So they brought Him a denarius. And He said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?" They said to Him, "Caesar's." And He said to them, "Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's." When they had heard these words, they marveled, and left Him and went their way.'

### **-Which Image?**

In yet another effort to trap Jesus the Pharisees and Herodians (who have joined around their shared goal of getting rid of Jesus) approach Him at first with flattery and then ask Him a very pointed question regarding tax and Caesar. His response is not what they are expecting at all. He points out that the coin and financial system bears Caesars image and therefore give to him what he is due but He then points them to a reality that hadn't considered in their approach to trap Him. That mankind was initially created in God's Image and Likeness (Genesis 1:27) and even through the fall gave them a new image (Genesis 5:2) mankind still belongs to God and He has our highest allegiance even above Caesar.

### **Sadducees and The Resurrection**

**Matthew 22:23-33** (Mark 12:18-27, Luke 20:27-40)

'The same day the Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to Him and asked Him, saying: "Teacher, Moses said that if a man dies, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife and raise up offspring for his brother. Now there were with us seven brothers. The first died after he had married, and having no offspring, left his wife to his brother. Likewise the second also, and the third, even to the



seventh. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife of the seven will she be? For they all had her." Jesus answered and said to them, "You are mistaken, not knowing the Scriptures nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels of God in heaven. But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was spoken to you by God, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living." And when the multitudes heard this, they were astonished at His teaching.'

### **-Moses**

The passage of Scripture that the Sadducees are basing their question on is found in Deuteronomy 25:5-10 where Moses is addressing the marriage and inheritance dynamics of a fledgling nation and how they should keep tribal lands and property within the tribe. The hypocrisy of the Sadducees in their question to Jesus is that they don't even believe in the resurrection and are trying to trap Jesus in His response to reinforce their own self righteous beliefs. He points them beyond the the natural ramifications of their question into the reality that once a saint of God dies, they are more alive than they ever were whilst they remained on the Earth. He has mastery over death but He is The God of the living as life is the very substance of His Being and when we are with Him in Covenant we become partakers of that same Life.

### **-Married to The Lamb**

There is also another truth here that can only be understood when it is seen in the context of the whole Bible. The main reason why there will be no marriages in heaven is that we are actually currently betrothed (2 Corinthians 11:2) to The Lamb and headed to a wedding feast at the end of the age where we will be married to The Lamb and He will not share us with another!

## **The Greatest Commandment**

**Matthew 22:34-40** (Mark 12:28-34, Luke 10:25-28)

'But when the Pharisees heard that He had silenced the Sadducees, they gathered together. Then one of them, a lawyer, asked Him a question, testing Him, and saying, "Teacher, which is the great commandment in the law?" Jesus said to him, "'You shall love the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind.' This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like it: 'You shall love your neighbor as yourself.' On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.'"

### **-The Definition of Christian Success**

If we want to know how to be fruitful and successful in our walks with God this response from Jesus as to which is the greatest commandment gives us a very clear and simple answer to that question. The key to a fruitful and faithful walk is found in loving God with our whole hearts, souls and minds and learning to minister to The Lord as the foundation of our lives and in turn that gives us the ability to love our neighbors as ourselves. It seems almost too easy for it to be that simple but Jesus show us that the entirety of the Law and the Prophets are hung on this reality of love towards God and then towards people.

### **-The Heart First**

There is very specific order being laid out by Jesus in this command in terms of how our love relationship with God should flow. It is from the heart first, which is the opposite of how people are wired in terms of how we approach faith and relationship at times. God has designed relationship to be a matter of the heart and not so much a matter of the mind as intimacy cannot be logically expressed at times because it deals with the unsearchable depths of our inner most beings. He doesn't just want a mental ascent to what He has brought before us in His Son, He is looking for a depth of affection that can only be lived out through heart to heart connection and intimacy and not through mental gymnastics and intellectual exercise.

### **How Can Messiah Be David's Son?**

**Matthew 22:41-46** (Mark 12:35-37, Luke 20:41-44)

'While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, "What do you think about the Christ? Whose Son is He?" They said to Him, "The Son of David." He said to them, "How then does David in the Spirit call Him 'Lord,' saying: 'The LORD said to my Lord, "Sit at My right hand, Till I make Your enemies Your footstool" ' ? If David then calls Him 'Lord,' how is He his Son?" And no one was able to answer Him a word, nor from that day on did anyone dare question Him anymore.'

### **-In The Spirit**

There is a particular phrase that Jesus uses when referencing David and his prophetic declaration of The coming Lord who would also be seen as his son and that is 'in the spirit'. David was an unusual man for his time as he technically set up a system of prayer and worship that was illegal for the covenant that was in place and he ministered before The Lord in a priestly way that was also illegal. He saw the day of Messiah coming as he ministered before The Presence of The Lord and his ministry was 'in the spirit' which also would not be seen until the New Covenant. This prayer and worship ministry to The Lord that David set up would actually be reestablished in The Last Days (Acts 15:16) and will be a key component to prophetic understanding and walking in the spirit in that season on the Earth.

### **-Prophecy Being Fulfilled**

Now this verse that Jesus quotes in Psalm 110:1 'A Psalm of David. The LORD said to my Lord, "Sit at My right hand, Till I make Your enemies Your footstool."' is actually a prophecy that had begun to be fulfilled in His first coming and is still being fulfilled in The Gospel going forth into the nations and will ultimately be fulfilled at His Return when He defeats His enemies (Revelation 19:11-21) and sets up His Millennial Kingdom on the Earth (Revelation 20:4-6).

# Matthew: Week Five

## Session One

### The Day of The Lord

In tonight's first session we will be mainly looking at Jesus' private instructions to His disciples concerning the reality of The Day of The Lord which is also known as The Olivet Discourse. This subject has been at times a source of great division and controversy within the church as there is a variety of opinions and positions concerning the actual meaning of these Scriptures as well as the ongoing discussion concerning whether it will be a pre-tribulation, mid-tribulation or post-tribulation rapture and are these passages symbolic or literal.

Whenever we talk about the end times the rapture becomes a hot topic that is brought up in the midst of these realities Jesus teaches on in this passage of Scripture, but that won't be the focus of this session as we will be looking at the dynamics of the generation of The Lord's Return, some of the signs of the times, the relational issues of betrayal and offense within the church during those days, the reality of false teaching and deception as well as how to navigate all of these things with the right heart posture and understanding. This doesn't need to be a fearful subject as we have been given a roadmap in the Scriptures with some very real keys and signposts to help keep our hearts at peace in the midst of the most extreme days the Earth has ever seen.

### Woe to The Scribes and Pharisees

**Matthew 23:1-36** (Mark 12:38-40, Luke 20:45-47)

'Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes and to His disciples, saying: "The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. Therefore whatever they tell you to observe, that observe and do, but do not do according to their works; for they say, and do not do. For they bind heavy burdens, hard to bear, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do to be seen by men. They make their phylacteries broad and enlarge the borders of their garments. They love the best places at feasts, the best seats in the synagogues, greetings in the marketplaces, and to be called by men, 'Rabbi, Rabbi.' But you, do not be called 'Rabbi'; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. Do not call anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Christ. But he who is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted. But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. Therefore you will receive greater condemnation. Woe to you, scribes

and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves. Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'Whoever swears by the temple, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gold of the temple, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gold or the temple that sanctifies the gold? And, 'Whoever swears by the altar, it is nothing; but whoever swears by the gift that is on it, he is obliged to perform it.' Fools and blind! For which is greater, the gift or the altar that sanctifies the gift? Therefore he who swears by the altar, swears by it and by all things on it. He who swears by the temple, swears by it and by Him who dwells in it. And he who swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God and by Him who sits on it. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith. These you ought to have done, without leaving the others undone. Blind guides, who strain out a gnat and swallow a camel! Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you cleanse the outside of the cup and dish, but inside they are full of extortion and self-indulgence. Blind Pharisee, first cleanse the inside of the cup and dish, that the outside of them may be clean also. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which indeed appear beautiful outwardly, but inside are full of dead men's bones and all uncleanness. Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! Because you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous, and say, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.' Therefore you are witnesses against yourselves that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers' guilt. Serpents, brood of vipers! How can you escape the condemnation of hell? Therefore, indeed, I send you prophets, wise men, and scribes: some of them you will kill and crucify, and some of them you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from city to city, that on you may come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel to the blood of Zechariah, son of Berechiah, whom you murdered between the temple and the altar. Assuredly, I say to you, all these things will come upon this generation."

### **-The Strength of Love**

There is so much to glean from in Jesus's woes to the Pharisees that is quite clear and straight forward, but these passages of Scripture also present to us a subtle truth that needs to be examined and understood. That is the strength of Love. We live in a day where love has become quite anemic and sentimentally motivated and expressed, that we are in need of redefining love in the church so that we can navigate the world around us more effectively and without compromise. Jesus is the express image of The Father (Hebrews 1:3) and we know that God is Love (1 John 4:8) so everything that Jesus says and does is an expression of Love. His Rebuke of the Pharisees actually show us that real love has true strength within it and takes no delight in evil but rejoices with the truth (1 Corinthians 13:6). Love needs to have confrontation within it as well as rebuke as real love does not give permission to sin but in fact gives us empowerment to living righteous and full of truth. The world actually needs to see this kind of love so we need to make sure that we submit to The Discipline of The Fathers Love (Hebrews 12:3-11) so that we can walk in the strength that is found in love.

### **-Truth With Different Weights**

So this may rock the boat a little but there is different weights to truths found within The Bible. It says in 2 Timothy 2:15 'Be diligent to present yourself approved to God, a worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.' and in 2 John 2:19 'Whoever transgresses and does not abide in the doctrine of Christ does not have God. He who abides in the doctrine of Christ has both the

Father and the Son.'. So this show us that there is one doctrine which is Christ with many divisible truths to be found within Him. This is what Jesus is referring to when he says there are weightier matters to the law like mercy, justice and faith and when it says in 1 Corinthians 13:13 'And now abide faith, hope, love, these three; but the greatest of these is love.'

## **Jesus Laments Over Jerusalem**

**Matthew 23:37-39** (Luke 13:34-35)

"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, the one who kills the prophets and stones those who are sent to her! How often I wanted to gather your children together, as a hen gathers her chicks under her wings, but you were not willing! See! Your house is left to you desolate; for I say to you, you shall see Me no more till you say, 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the LORD!' " "

### **-Jesus' Desire**

This is such a profound picture of God's Heart towards humanity being expressed by Jesus Lamenting over Jerusalem. He Longs to gather us in under His Covering and Love but it takes a decision to receive Him from individuals for Him to be able to do that. Jesus didn't desire that Israel be rejected but He gave them the freedom of choice even though their choice would break His Heart. He desires relationship with us and we need to make sure that we present that offer to the world around us.

### **-Prophecy To Be Fulfilled**

Now when Jesus arrived as the promised Messiah and King in His entrance to Jerusalem in Matthew 21:1-10 this was an initial fulfillment of the prophecy found in Psalm 118:26 'Blessed is he who comes in the name of the LORD! We have blessed you from the house of the LORD.'. Bible prophecy has a constant pattern of initial fulfillment and then a total fulfillment to be found in the Person of Jesus. Jesus use of the Psalm of Messiah in His Lament over Jerusalem is prophesying to the day of His Return when He will enter Jerusalem again but not as a Lamb to be slain but as the Conquering Lion of Judah as He sets up His Millennial Kingdom where He will rule and reign from Jerusalem (2 Samuel 7:1-16).

## **The Future Destruction of The Temple**

**Matthew 24:1-2** (Mark 13:1, Luke 21:5-6)

'Then Jesus went out and departed from the temple, and His disciples came up to show Him the buildings of the temple. And Jesus said to them, "Do you not see all these things? Assuredly, I say to you, not one stone shall be left here upon another, that shall not be thrown down.'"

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

This prophecy was fulfilled in 70ad when the Romans came into Jerusalem to squash the rebellion that had been started. They set fire to the temple and afterwards went in and took down every stone so as to recover the gold that had melted and fallen between the cracks fulfilling the words of Jesus to the very last detail. This was a literal fulfillment of prophecy and it sets the stage for us to see that the following prophecies made by Jesus will also be literally fulfilled and not symbolically.

## **The Signs of The Times and The End of The Age**

**Matthew 24:3-14** (Mark 13:3-13, Luke 21:7-19)

'Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?" And Jesus answered and said to them: "Take heed that no one deceives you. For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many. And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then they will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name's sake. And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another. Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold. But he who endures to the end shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come.'"

### **-Offense and Betrayal**

One of the dynamics that Jesus begins to describe in response to what would be the sign of His Coming and the end of the age will be a marked increase of offense and betrayal. This isn't just directed at the world but will sadly also be a dynamic that is being played out amongst the body. People will not only become offended at each other but because of a lack of understanding in regards to the plans and purposes of God in these particular days, they will also become offended at God. Once that kind of offense gets into the heart it becomes sadly a natural outcome that betrayal will soon follow as the hardness of heart that people will be living in will make their conscience seared and unfeeling towards their brothers and sisters in Christ. This won't be everyone but it will be a group of people who will be amongst the body that we will have to know how to navigate if we are to walk well in the midst of these kinds of issues.

### **-The Gospel of The Kingdom**

When we use the term Gospel of The Kingdom we will rightfully think of signs, wonders and miracles and people being saved. That is true but Jesus actually includes the dynamics of disease, conflict, deception, offense and betrayal, wars and diseases with the context of the Gospel of The Kingdom. The Gospel of The Kingdom is actually designed to be displayed in the midst of these kind of dynamics and issues and it is in this kind of darkness that the Light of The Gospel truly shines.

## **The Great Tribulation**

**Matthew 24:15-28** (Mark 13:14-23, Luke 17:23-24, 17:37, 21:20-24)

"Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house. And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! And pray that your flight may not be in winter or on the Sabbath. For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time,

no, nor ever shall be. And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect's sake those days will be shortened. Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There!' do not believe it. For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. See, I have told you beforehand. Therefore if they say to you, 'Look, He is in the desert!' do not go out; or 'Look, He is in the inner rooms!' do not believe it. For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together.'"

### **-Prophecy Yet To Be Fulfilled**

Jesus is making mention of the prophecies recorded in Daniel 11:31 "'And forces shall be mustered by him, and they shall defile the sanctuary fortress; then they shall take away the daily sacrifices, and place there the abomination of desolation.'" and Daniel 12:11 "'And from the time that the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred and ninety days.'" This is pointing to a third temple that will be built and in that place the antichrist will set up worship unto himself for three and half years. This is to be a signpost to the generation who is on the earth that it is time to get out of the region as it will only continue to escalate from that point forward in the region as the great tribulation has begun and will be a time like the earth has never seen. Now there were some similar dynamics in 70ad they were only a signpost and not the fulfillment of Daniel's prophecy concerning The Last Days.

### **The Coming of The Son of Man**

**Matthew 24:29-31** (Mark 13:24-27, Luke 21:25-28)

"Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."

### **-In Like Manner**

The sign of the Son of Man will be something to behold, but to understand it a little better we have to go forwards to Acts 1:11 where it is written 'who also said, "Men of Galilee, why do you stand gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, who was taken up from you into heaven, will so come in like manner as you saw Him go into heaven.'" The return of Jesus will be in 'Like Manner' meaning that the same astonishment, wonder and glory that accompanied His Ascension will also be present in His Return as well as He will be physically and literally returning and not symbolically and spiritually.

### **-Natural Babylon and Spiritual Babylon**

Isaiah 13:10 is being quoted here by Jesus and it's taken from a passage of prophecy (Isaiah 13&14) which is prophesying to the judgment of the nation of Babylon. Jesus is using this natural and historical illustration to point to the condition and nature of His Return. That just as natural Babylon and its king were judged and destroyed, so will the future spiritual kingdom of Babylon (Revelation 18:1-8) and it's king (satan). Jesus is using the natural to point to the spiritual (1 Corinthians 15:46) and Israel's history to point to its future.

## **The Parable of The Fig Tree**

**Matthew 24:32-35** (Mark 13:28-31, Luke 21:29-33)

“Now learn this parable from the fig tree: When its branch has already become tender and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near. So you also, when you see all these things, know that it is near—at the doors! Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all these things take place. Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.”

### **-The Eternal Word**

We have such a tremendous hope in the Eternal Enduring Word of God. It will never cease to exist and will not pass away but will be eternally with us not only in the person of Jesus but also the truth that it embodies will be an eternal reality that we will most likely never be able to plumb the depths of no matter how much time has passed.

## **No One Knows The Day or The Hour**

**Matthew 24:36-44** (Mark 13:32-37, Luke 17:26-27, 17:34-35, 21:34-36)

“But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, but My Father only. But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. For as in the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark, and did not know until the flood came and took them all away, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. Then two men will be in the field: one will be taken and the other left. Two women will be grinding at the mill: one will be taken and the other left. Watch therefore, for you do not know what hour your Lord is coming. But know this, that if the master of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched and not allowed his house to be broken into. Therefore you also be ready, for the Son of Man is coming at an hour you do not expect.”

### **-Bridal Language and Road Map**

Within the Jewish marriage customs we find some very interesting keys to understand the progression of the Work of Christ and His Return for His Bride. The father of the groom would choose a bride for his son that would be worthy of him (Ephesians 1:4) and then the bridegroom would then pay a dowry for his bride (1 Corinthians 6:20). There would be a betrothal ceremony that would include the drinking of the cup of wine together which wouldn't be drunk of again until the bridegroom returns for his bride (Matthew 26:29) as well as the exchanging of rings and gifts. There would then be a period of a year where the bridegroom would go and add a room onto his father's house to prepare a place for his bride (John 14:1-3) and she would prepare herself to be a bride fit for her bridegroom (Revelation 19:7). It was then up to the father of the bridegroom to determine the day and the hour that his son would return for his bride as this is the same language we see Jesus using in reference to the time of His Return. All of the times and seasons that are being played out in the earth are all going to come together in the fulfillment of all things in the Marriage of The Lamb!



## **The Faithful Servant and Evil Servant**

### **Matthew 24:45-51 (Luke 12:41-48)**

'Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his master made ruler over his household, to give them food in due season? Blessed is that servant whom his master, when he comes, will find so doing. Assuredly, I say to you that he will make him ruler over all his goods. But if that evil servant says in his heart, 'My master is delaying his coming, and begins to beat his fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunkards, the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for him and at an hour that he is not aware of, and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.'"

### **-Being Ready**

Even though we may not have a precise date and time for His Return we are instructed to not grow weary or fall asleep in the days leading up to His Return. We need to maintain a posture of diligence and prayerfulness in the days ahead as there is still much work to be done in the preaching of The Gospel and gathering in of the harvest for our King.

## **The Ten Virgins**

### **Matthew 25:1-13**

"Then the kingdom of heaven shall be likened to ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. Now five of them were wise, and five were foolish. Those who were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them, but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. But while the bridegroom was delayed, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight a cry was heard: 'Behold, the bridegroom is coming; go out to meet him!' Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.' But the wise answered, saying, 'No, lest there should not be enough for us and you; but go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves.' And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready went in with him to the wedding; and the door was shut. Afterward the other virgins came also, saying, 'Lord, Lord, open to us!' But he answered and said, 'Assuredly, I say to you, I do not know you.' Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of Man is coming.'"

### **-The Bridal Paradigm Continues**

The time and arrival of the bridegroom was unknown to the bride and her bridesmaids and this is what the parable is alluding to as waiting at the gate for the announcement of the bridegroom was a common practice of Jesus time. The posture He is highlighting here is to make sure that at every moment we are storing up the oil of intimacy with our King as there will come a day where creating that relationship will no longer be possible. There will be no more oil to buy. Once He returns for His Bride there will no longer be an opportunity to be saved as the age of grace will have been completed in His Return and the door to The Ark of Jesus will have been closed.

## The Parable of The Talents

**Matthew 25:14-30** (Luke 19:11-27)

“For the kingdom of heaven is like a man traveling to a far country, who called his own servants and delivered his goods to them. And to one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to each according to his own ability; and immediately he went on a journey. Then he who had received the five talents went and traded with them, and made another five talents. And likewise he who had received two gained two more also. But he who had received one went and dug in the ground, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants came and settled accounts with them. So he who had received five talents came and brought five other talents, saying, 'Lord, you delivered to me five talents; look, I have gained five more talents besides them.' His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you were faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.' He also who had received two talents came and said, 'Lord, you delivered to me two talents; look, I have gained two more talents besides them.' His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.' Then he who had received the one talent came and said, 'Lord, I knew you to be a hard man, reaping where you have not sown, and gathering where you have not scattered seed. And I was afraid, and went and hid your talent in the ground. Look, there you have what is yours.' But his lord answered and said to him, 'You wicked and lazy servant, you knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather where I have not scattered seed. So you ought to have deposited my money with the bankers, and at my coming I would have received back my own with interest. Therefore take the talent from him, and give it to him who has ten talents. For to everyone who has, more will be given, and he will have abundance; but from him who does not have, even what he has will be taken away. And cast the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.' ”

### -Stewardship and Leadership

This is a very well known parable and has a lot of different applications to our current lives, as do all of the parables of Jesus. But as we have been seeing through these chapters that Jesus is referencing The Day of His Return throughout these parables and this parable is no different. The master has given different measures of talents to his servants (Ephesians 4:7) and at his return he rewards each one according to the work of his hands, except for the one that did nothing with what he was given. He then rewards them with leadership over cities (as written in Luke's account of the parable) due to the stewardship in the time before his return. This speaks of believers having a place of leadership and ruling over cities in the Millennial Kingdom of Jesus (Revelation 2:26-27) and part of our reward for our stewardship in this age will be to help rule and reign in the age of His Kingdom being established from Jerusalem to the ends of the earth!

## Jesus Judges The Nations

**Matthew 25:31-46**

“When the Son of Man comes in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then He will sit on the throne of His glory. All the nations will be gathered before Him, and He will separate them one from another, as a shepherd divides his sheep from the goats. And He will set the sheep on His right hand, but the goats on the left. Then the King will say to those on His right hand, 'Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was hungry and you

gave Me food; I was thirsty and you gave Me drink; I was a stranger and you took Me in; I was naked and you clothed Me; I was sick and you visited Me; I was in prison and you came to Me.' Then the righteous will answer Him, saying, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry and feed You, or thirsty and give You drink? When did we see You a stranger and take You in, or naked and clothe You? Or when did we see You sick, or in prison, and come to You?' And the King will answer and say to them, 'Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did it to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me.' Then He will also say to those on the left hand, 'Depart from Me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was hungry and you gave Me no food; I was thirsty and you gave Me no drink; I was a stranger and you did not take Me in, naked and you did not clothe Me, sick and in prison and you did not visit Me.' Then they also will answer Him, saying, 'Lord, when did we see You hungry or thirsty or a stranger or naked or sick or in prison, and did not minister to You?' Then He will answer them, saying, 'Assuredly, I say to you, inasmuch as you did not do it to one of the least of these, you did not do it to Me.' And these will go away into everlasting punishment, but the righteous into eternal life.'"

### **-Sheep and Goats**

Given the context of the Day of The Lord it would appear that this is a separating out before the millennial reign of Christ as opposed to the White Throne Judgment (Revelation 20:11-15) where all of humanity is judged. The focus of this parable given by Jesus is quite simple yet quite profound. The difference between the sheep and the goats was in how they treated the poor, the vulnerable, the stranger and the imprisoned of the earth. It was their mercy that determined whether or not they were a sheep or goat.



# Matthew: Week Five

## Session Two

### It Is Finished

The life of Jesus fulfilled over sixty one Messianic prophecies and hundreds of Old Testament Scriptures, but His Life and obedience also fulfilled the 613 Laws and Ordinances that mankind could never fulfill. He is the fulfillment of all of God's Promises and He Alone is worthy to purchase humanity with His Blood. When He cries 'It is Finished' (John 19:30) it is was exactly that, finished and complete with nothing lacking or needing to be added to. Once He Died the curse was broken, the Law is Fulfilled and a new and living way was opened to humanity to enter in though His Resurrection and Ascension.

In this last session of Matthew we will see that the timing of the feast of Passover sets the stage for the Purposes and Timeline of God to be fulfilled as the True Passover Lamb is ready to take away the sins of the world. Jesus continues to love and serve the disciples even in the midst of betrayal, receives extravagant and costly worship to anoint Him for His Burial, initiates 'The meal that heals' and prophesies His most zealous disciples denial of Him. The stage is set for the most important event in all of history.

### The Plot To Kill Jesus

**Matthew 26:1-5** (Mark 14:1-2, Luke 22:1-2, John 11:45-53)

'Now it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, that He said to His disciples, "You know that after two days is the Passover, and the Son of Man will be delivered up to be crucified." Then the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders of the people assembled at the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and plotted to take Jesus by trickery and kill Him. But they said, "Not during the feast, lest there be an uproar among the people."'

### -The Feast

Now the feast that is being mentioned here is the feast of Passover and that would include not only the Night of Passover but also the feast of Unleavened Bread as well as the Feast of First Fruits. The chief priest, scribes and elders didn't want to take Jesus during this time as it would have caused not small stir, but the timing of Jesus atonement wasn't in the hands of men but firmly within the Timeline of God.

## **The Alabaster Box**

**Matthew 26:6-13** (Mark 14:3-9, John 12:1-8)

'And when Jesus was in Bethany at the house of Simon the leper, a woman came to Him having an alabaster flask of very costly fragrant oil, and she poured it on His head as He sat at the table. But when His disciples saw it, they were indignant, saying, "Why this waste? For this fragrant oil might have been sold for much and given to the poor." But when Jesus was aware of it, He said to them, "Why do you trouble the woman? For she has done a good work for Me. For you have the poor with you always, but Me you do not have always. For in pouring this fragrant oil on My body, she did it for My burial. Assuredly, I say to you, wherever this gospel is preached in the whole world, what this woman has done will also be told as a memorial to her.'"

### **-Costly Worship**

What a beautiful picture of what true worship really looks like. It is costly and full of the fragrance of affection towards Jesus. This is the same kind of worship that has been seen throughout The Scriptures and even in the life of David (2 Samuel 24:24) and it is the same truth that is seen throughout all of the offerings and sacrifices of the Law, that worship towards God should be costly and extravagant and not half hearted or insincere. Now we know that this is Mary Magdalene that is breaking the alabaster flask over Jesus as she knows just much she has been loved by Jesus (and delivered) and this is the only right way to express that love back to Him.

## **Judas Agrees To Betray Jesus**

**Matthew 26:14-16** (Mark 14:10-11, Luke 22:3-6)

'Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went to the chief priests and said, "What are you willing to give me if I deliver Him to you?" And they counted out to him thirty pieces of silver. So from that time he sought opportunity to betray Him.'

### **-The Thirty Silver Pieces**

This price of betrayal isn't random or just a token amount of silver given to Judas. This price for the life of Jesus actually reveals the value that the chief priests had towards The Messiah. Exodus 21:32 "'If the ox gores a male or female servant, he shall give to their master thirty shekels of silver, and the ox shall be stoned.'" The chief priests valued Jesus so little that they paid the price of a servant that had been accidentally killed by an ox and would be remembered no more.

## **Passover**

**Matthew 26:17-25** (Mark 14:12-21, Luke 22:7-13)

'Now on the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread the disciples came to Jesus, saying to Him, "Where do You want us to prepare for You to eat the Passover?" And He said, "Go into the city to a certain man, and say to him, 'The Teacher says, "My time is at hand; I will keep the Passover at your house with My disciples." ' ' " So the disciples did as Jesus had directed them; and they prepared the

Passover. When evening had come, He sat down with the twelve. Now as they were eating, He said, "Assuredly, I say to you, one of you will betray Me." And they were exceedingly sorrowful, and each of them began to say to Him, "Lord, is it I?" He answered and said, "He who dipped his hand with Me in the dish will betray Me. The Son of Man indeed goes just as it is written of Him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been good for that man if he had not been born." Then Judas, who was betraying Him, answered and said, "Rabbi, is it I?" He said to him, "You have said it."

## **The Lords Supper**

**Matthew 26:26-30** (Mark 14:22-26, Luke 22:14-23)

'And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to the disciples and said, "Take, eat; this is My body." Then He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, "Drink from it, all of you. For this is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say to you, I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on until that day when I drink it new with you in My Father's kingdom.'"

### **-The Life is in The Blood**

It says in Leviticus 17:11 "For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you upon the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood that makes atonement for the soul." and is that life that flows through Jesus that we are invited to consume and have within us through communion with Him.

### **-The Bread of Presence**

Now the bread that He offers is the flesh of His own Body and Person and it is foremost the bread of affliction as written in Deuteronomy 16:3 "You shall eat no leavened bread with it; seven days you shall eat unleavened bread with it, that is, the bread of affliction (for you came out of the land of Egypt in haste), that you may remember the day in which you came out of the land of Egypt all the days of your life." that becomes for us the bread of His Presence as we partake in His Sufferings (1 Peter 4:12-13) and Death so the His Life would be revealed through us.

## **Jesus Prophecies Peter's Denial**

**Matthew 26:31-35** (Mark 14:27-31, Luke 22:31-34, John 13:36-38)

'Then Jesus said to them, "All of you will be made to stumble because of Me this night, for it is written: 'I will strike the Shepherd, And the sheep of the flock will be scattered.' But after I have been raised, I will go before you to Galilee." Peter answered and said to Him, "Even if all are made to stumble because of You, I will never be made to stumble." Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you that this night, before the rooster crows, you will deny Me three times." Peter said to Him, "Even if I have to die with You, I will not deny You!" And so said all the disciples.'

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Zechariah 13:7 "'Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, against the Man who is My Companion," says the LORD of hosts. "Strike the Shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered; then I will turn My hand against the little ones.'

### **Gethsemane**

**Matthew 26:36-46** (Mark 14:32-42, Luke 22:39-46)

'Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and said to the disciples, "Sit here while I go and pray over there." And He took with Him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and He began to be sorrowful and deeply distressed. Then He said to them, "My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even to death. Stay here and watch with Me." He went a little farther and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, "O My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as You will." Then He came to the disciples and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, "What? Could you not watch with Me one hour? Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak." Again, a second time, He went away and prayed, saying, "O My Father, if this cup cannot pass away from Me unless I drink it, Your will be done." And He came and found them asleep again, for their eyes were heavy. So He left them, went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. Then He came to His disciples and said to them, "Are you still sleeping and resting? Behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise, let us be going. See, My betrayer is at hand.'"

### **-The Cup of Suffering**

Wine to a Jew represented joy and celebration but in order for this cup to be transformed it had to endured and consumed though suffering before the joy that was promised would be released. This joy would be come full once Jesus had fulfilled His Mission (Hebrews 12:2) and we are invited into that same lifestyle as Jesus turns the things that we suffer for His Namesake into joy unspeakable in our innermost beings (James 1:2).

### **Jesus Arrested**

**Matthew 26:47-56** (Mark 14:43-52, Luke 22:47-53, John 18:1-11)

'And while He was still speaking, behold, Judas, one of the twelve, with a great multitude with swords and clubs, came from the chief priests and elders of the people. Now His betrayer had given them a sign, saying, "Whomever I kiss, He is the One; seize Him." Immediately he went up to Jesus and said, "Greetings, Rabbi!" and kissed Him. But Jesus said to him, "Friend, why have you come?" Then they came and laid hands on Jesus and took Him. And suddenly, one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand and drew his sword, struck the servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. But Jesus said to him, "Put your sword in its place, for all who take the sword will perish by the sword. Or do you think that I cannot now pray to My Father, and He will provide Me with more than twelve legions of angels? How then could the Scriptures be fulfilled, that it must happen thus?" In that hour Jesus said to the



multitudes, "Have you come out, as against a robber, with swords and clubs to take Me? I sat daily with you, teaching in the temple, and you did not seize Me. But all this was done that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled." Then all the disciples forsook Him and fled.'

#### **-Friend**

Jesus response to Judas shows you just how much of a betrayal this really was for Him. He considers Judas a friend and had loved and walked with Him for over three years. For Judas to then come and betray Him with a kiss, which is was a sign of friendship, was deeper than what we realize. This was a true betrayal and even though it was prophesied it would have still broken Jesus heart to see him lost to destruction.

#### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Psalms 41:9 "Even my own familiar friend in whom I trusted, who ate my bread, has lifted up his heel against me."

### **Jesus and The Sanhedrin**

**Matthew 26:57-68** (Mark 14:53-65, Luke 22:66-71, John 18:12-14)

'And those who had laid hold of Jesus led Him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled. But Peter followed Him at a distance to the high priest's courtyard. And he went in and sat with the servants to see the end. Now the chief priests, the elders, and all the council sought false testimony against Jesus to put Him to death, but found none. Even though many false witnesses came forward, they found none. But at last two false witnesses came forward and said, "This fellow said, 'I am able to destroy the temple of God and to build it in three days.'" And the high priest arose and said to Him, "Do You answer nothing? What is it these men testify against You?" But Jesus kept silent. And the high priest answered and said to Him, "I put You under oath by the living God: Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!" Jesus said to him, "It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you, hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven." Then the high priest tore his clothes, saying, "He has spoken blasphemy! What further need do we have of witnesses? Look, now you have heard His blasphemy! "What do you think?" They answered and said, "He is deserving of death." Then they spat in His face and beat Him; and others struck Him with the palms of their hands, saying, "Prophecy to us, Christ! Who is the one who struck You?"'

#### **-False Witnesses**

Now these were the only witnesses they could find to support their agenda as no real witnesses could be found. Jesus had been perfect in all that He did and had never once broken the law but the chief priest were so determined to remove Him that would go to any length to accuse Him.

#### **-The Christ**

For the chief priest to ask this question would have made Jesus His own witness in a legal trial (which is illegal but we will examine that in Mark) but they also put Him under oath to answer truthfully to their question, "are you The Christ the Son of God?" Jesus responds with the truth that He is The Anointed One, their Messiah and He is God's Son and this was too much for them to handle. They would have rather violated the law and kill an innocent man than recognize God Standing in front of them.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 50:6 "I gave My back to those who struck Me, and My cheeks to those who plucked out the beard; I did not hide My face from shame and spitting."

### **Peter Denies Jesus**

**Matthew 26:69-75** (Mark 14:66-72, Luke 22:54-62, John 18:15-18, 18:25-27)

'Now Peter sat outside in the courtyard. And a servant girl came to him, saying, "You also were with Jesus of Galilee." But he denied it before them all, saying, "I do not know what you are saying." And when he had gone out to the gateway, another girl saw him and said to those who were there, "This fellow also was with Jesus of Nazareth." But again he denied with an oath, "I do not know the Man!" And a little later those who stood by came up and said to Peter, "Surely you also are one of them, for your speech betrays you." Then he began to curse and swear, saying, "I do not know the Man!" Immediately a rooster crowed. And Peter remembered the word of Jesus who had said to him, "Before the rooster crows, you will deny Me three times." So he went out and wept bitterly.'

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Matthew 26:34 'Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you that this night, before the rooster crows, you will deny Me three times.'"

### **Jesus Handed Over To Pilate**

**Matthew 27:1-2** (Mark 15:1, Luke 23:1, John 18:28)

'When morning came, all the chief priests and elders of the people plotted against Jesus to put Him to death. And when they had bound Him, they led Him away and delivered Him to Pontius Pilate the governor.'

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Matthew 20:18-19 "'Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and to the scribes; and they will condemn Him to death, and deliver Him to the Gentiles to mock and to scourge and to crucify. And the third day He will rise again.'"

### **Judas Hangs Himself**

**Matthew 27:3-10** (Acts 1:18-19)

'Then Judas, His betrayer, seeing that He had been condemned, was remorseful and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, "I have sinned by betraying innocent blood." And they said, "What is that to us? You see to it!" Then he threw down the pieces of silver in the temple and departed, and went and hanged himself. But the chief priests took the silver pieces and said, "It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because they are the price of blood." And they consulted

together and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Therefore that field has been called the Field of Blood to this day. Then was fulfilled what was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, "And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the value of Him who was priced, whom they of the children of Israel priced, and gave them for the potter's field, as the LORD directed me."

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Jeremiah 32:6-9 'And Jeremiah said, "The word of the LORD came to me, saying, 'Behold, Hanamel the son of Shallum your uncle will come to you, saying, "Buy my field which is in Anathoth, for the right of redemption is yours to buy it." ' "Then Hanamel my uncle's son came to me in the court of the prison according to the word of the LORD, and said to me, 'Please buy my field that is in Anathoth, which is in the country of Benjamin; for the right of inheritance is yours, and the redemption yours; buy it for yourself.' Then I knew that this was the word of the LORD. So I bought the field from Hanamel, the son of my uncle who was in Anathoth, and weighed out to him the money—seventeen shekels of silver."

Zechariah 11:12-13 'Then I said to them, "If it is agreeable to you, give me my wages; and if not, refrain." So they weighed out for my wages thirty pieces of silver. And the LORD said to me, "Throw it to the potter"—that princely price they set on me. So I took the thirty pieces of silver and threw them into the house of the LORD for the potter.'

### **Jesus Faces Pilate**

**Matthew 27:11-14** (Mark 15:2-5, Luke 23:2-5, John 18:29-38)

'Now Jesus stood before the governor. And the governor asked Him, saying, "Are You the King of the Jews?" Jesus said to him, "It is as you say." And while He was being accused by the chief priests and elders, He answered nothing. Then Pilate said to Him, "Do You not hear how many things they testify against You?" But He answered him not one word, so that the governor marveled greatly.'

### **-Legal Authority**

Now the Jews had no legal authority to execute Jesus under Roman Law so they brought Him to Pilate in an effort to have their desires fulfilled through the legal action of Rome. They brought many different charges before Pilate accusing Jesus of all manner of things that would directly defy Roman Law, but Pilate marveled that Jesus had no response towards them in this manner, Pilate was curious as to who this man really might be.

### **Jesus and Barabbas**

**Matthew 27:15-26** (Mark 15:6-15, Luke 23:13-25, John 18:39-40)

'Now at the feast the governor was accustomed to releasing to the multitude one prisoner whom they wished. And at that time they had a notorious prisoner called Barabbas. Therefore, when they had gathered together, Pilate said to them, "Whom do you want me to release to you? Barabbas, or Jesus who is called Christ?" For he knew that they had handed Him over because of envy. While he was sitting on the judgment seat, his wife sent to him, saying, "Have nothing to do with that just Man, for I have

suffered many things today in a dream because of Him.” But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitudes that they should ask for Barabbas and destroy Jesus. The governor answered and said to them, “Which of the two do you want me to release to you?” They said, “Barabbas!” Pilate said to them, “What then shall I do with Jesus who is called Christ?” They all said to him, “Let Him be crucified!” Then the governor said, “Why, what evil has He done?” But they cried out all the more, saying, “Let Him be crucified!” When Pilate saw that he could not prevail at all, but rather that a tumult was rising, he took water and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, “I am innocent of the blood of this just Person. You see to it.” And all the people answered and said, “His blood be on us and on our children.” Then he released Barabbas to them; and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered Him to be crucified.’

### **-Washing His Hands**

This act of washing his hands of the situation is so reminiscent to elements of the law of unsolved murder (Deuteronomy 21:1-9) in that when the elders couldn’t determine who was guilty of the murder, they washed their hands over the sacrifice that was made to atone for the murder. Now Pilate isn’t Jewish but the similarity is striking but the main difference here is that Pilate was in no way innocent of the blood about to be shed.

### **Crown of Thorns**

#### **Matthew 27:27-31** (Mark 15:16-20)

‘Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the Praetorium and gathered the whole garrison around Him. And they stripped Him and put a scarlet robe on Him. When they had twisted a crown of thorns, they put it on His head, and a reed in His right hand. And they bowed the knee before Him and mocked Him, saying, “Hail, King of the Jews!” Then they spat on Him, and took the reed and struck Him on the head. And when they had mocked Him, they took the robe off Him, put His own clothes on Him, and led Him away to be crucified.’

### **The Cross**

#### **Matthew 27:32-44** (Mark 15:21-32, Luke 23:36-43, John 19:17-27)

‘Now as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name. Him they compelled to bear His cross. And when they had come to a place called Golgotha, that is to say, Place of a Skull, they gave Him sour wine mingled with gall to drink. But when He had tasted it, He would not drink. Then they crucified Him, and divided His garments, casting lots, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet: “They divided My garments among them, and for My clothing they cast lots.” Sitting down, they kept watch over Him there. And they put up over His head the accusation written against Him: THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. Then two robbers were crucified with Him, one on the right and another on the left. And those who passed by blasphemed Him, wagging their heads and saying, “You who destroy the temple and build it in three days, save Yourself! If You are the Son of God, come down from the cross.” Likewise the chief priests also, mocking with the scribes and elders, said, “He saved others; Himself He cannot save. If He is the King of Israel, let Him now come down from the cross, and we will believe Him. He trusted in God; let Him deliver Him now if He will have Him; for He said, ‘I am the Son of God.’ ” Even the robbers who were crucified with Him reviled Him with the same thing.’

### **-The Sign**

Now we have to take a little detour into John 19:19-20 where it says 'Now Pilate wrote a title and put it on the cross. And the writing was: JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. Then many of the Jews read this title, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and it was written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin.' to understand why the chief priests responded the way they did. The Jews have a tradition of patterns and acrostic poems (Psalm 34 is one) and when Pilate had the sign written in Hebrew the first letters of every word written on the sign in Hebrew would actually would spell YHWY the unpronounceable name of God!

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Psalm 22:18 ' They divide My garments among them, and for My clothing they cast lots.'

### **Jesus Death**

**Matthew 27:45-56** (Mark 15:33-41, Luke 23:44-49, John 19:28-30)

'Now from the sixth hour until the ninth hour there was darkness over all the land. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, "Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?" that is, "My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?" Some of those who stood there, when they heard that, said, "This Man is calling for Elijah!" Immediately one of them ran and took a sponge, filled it with sour wine and put it on a reed, and offered it to Him to drink. The rest said, "Let Him alone; let us see if Elijah will come to save Him." And Jesus cried out again with a loud voice, and yielded up His spirit. Then, behold, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom; and the earth quaked, and the rocks were split, and the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised; and coming out of the graves after His resurrection, they went into the holy city and appeared to many. So when the centurion and those with him, who were guarding Jesus, saw the earthquake and the things that had happened, they feared greatly, saying, "Truly this was the Son of God!" And many women who followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering to Him, were there looking on from afar, among whom were Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's sons.'

### **-Jesus' Cry**

This is the only time where Jesus doesn't refer to God as Father. This is because He is in our place making atonement to The Father for us.

### **-The Veil**

Now the veil was torn from the top to the bottom, showing us that access to The Father had been bought by The Blood of Jesus, and this would have been no easy feat as the veil was about four inches thick and made of thick thread. The interesting thing is that God created that boundary Himself for His Presence to dwell upon the mercy seat (Exodus 25:22) and now that the barrier had been removed not only could we enter into His Presence, but also His Presence could begin to fill the rest of the temple as well. This represents the truth of once we have become born again His Presence can now begin to fill our temples (1 Corinthians 6:19) as He Transforms and Sanctifies us. This is what Paul is referring to as 'that you may be filled with all the fullness of God.' (Ephesians 3:19)

## **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Psalm 22:1 'To the Chief Musician. Set to "The Deer of the Dawn." A Psalm of David. My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me? Why are You so far from helping Me, And from the words of My groaning?'

## **Joseph's Tomb**

**Matthew 27:57-61** (Mark 15:42-47, Luke 23:50-60, John 19:38-42)

'Now when evening had come, there came a rich man from Arimathea, named Joseph, who himself had also become a disciple of Jesus. This man went to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. Then Pilate commanded the body to be given to him. When Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and laid it in his new tomb which he had hewn out of the rock; and he rolled a large stone against the door of the tomb, and departed. And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting opposite the tomb.'

## **Pilate's Guards**

**Matthew 27:62-66**

'On the next day, which followed the Day of Preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees gathered together to Pilate, saying, "Sir, we remember, while He was still alive, how that deceiver said, 'After three days I will rise.' Therefore command that the tomb be made secure until the third day, lest His disciples come by night and steal Him away, and say to the people, 'He has risen from the dead.' So the last **deception** will be worse than the first." Pilate said to them, "You have a guard; go your way, make it as secure as you know how." So they went and made the tomb secure, sealing the stone and setting the guard.'

πλάνη

Strong's G4106

plānē, plan'-ay; feminine of G4108 (as abstractly); objectively, fraudulence; subjectively, a straying from orthodoxy or piety:—deceit, to deceive, delusion, error.  
-error which shows itself in action, a wrong mode of acting

## **-Error**

Now in the NKJV the word used for deception is can also be translated as error. Could it be that the Chief Priests in some way might have suspected that they may have made an error or mistake in crucifying Jesus?

## **-The Seal**

This seal would have ben placed over the massive stone that was covering the entrance to the tomb and would be fixed in place with wax and would have been quite fragile so as to show if there had been any attempt to remove the stone. On top of that they placed a guard to watch over the tomb as well to make sure that no human interference would be played out at the tomb. What they didn't anticipate was an angel coming who cared not for seals and guards!

## **He Is Risen**

**Matthew 28:1-8** (Mark 16:1-8, Luke 24:1-12, John 20:1-10)

'Now after the Sabbath, as the first day of the week began to dawn, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to see the tomb. And behold, there was a great earthquake; for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat on it. His countenance was like lightning, and his clothing as white as snow. And the guards shook for fear of him, and became like dead men. But the angel answered and said to the women, "Do not be afraid, for I know that you seek Jesus who was crucified. He is not here; for He is risen, as He said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. And go quickly and tell His disciples that He is risen from the dead, and indeed He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see Him. Behold, I have told you." So they went out quickly from the tomb with fear and great joy, and ran to bring His disciples word.'

### **-Do Not Be Afraid**

This statement is the most common first thing that an angel will say to people at their appearing. This is because they have just been standing in the Holiness of The Father before the Throne to receive their orders and message and it is this atmosphere of The Glory of The Lord that they are carrying with them. This is why "do not be afraid" needs to be spoken as this kind of Glory carries Holiness and Reverence of God and it is the right response from mankind to be taken aback in fear to this kind of Glory.

### **-Fear and Great Joy**

There is something about when the Majesty of God is put on display that causes almost a contradiction within us, as we have the same response as Mary and Mary where we have great joy and at the same time a fear of The Lord within us. This shows us the truth that we need to be anchored in both 'the kindness and severity of our God' (Romans 11:22) for us to truly experience the majesty of His Resurrection Power.

## **Mary and Mary**

**Matthew 28:9-10**

'And as they went to tell His disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, "Rejoice!" So they came and held Him by the feet and worshiped Him. Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell My brethren to go to Galilee, and there they will see Me.'"

### **-The First Witnesses of The Resurrection**

Everything that unfolded in His Resurrection was with intent and had purpose behind it. Women in the culture of the day couldn't be public witnesses in legal sense but here we have Jesus giving the special honor of being the first public witnesses of His Resurrection to the two Marys. Jesus is showing that the culture of the Kingdom isn't like the culture of the world and that women will have a special place in The New Covenant as they will be pillars in His house as well as witnesses to His Gospel to the ends of the Earth.

## **The Soldiers**

### **Matthew 28:11-15**

'Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city and reported to the chief priests all the things that had happened. When they had assembled with the elders and consulted together, they gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, saying, "Tell them, 'His disciples came at night and stole Him away while we slept.' And if this comes to the governor's ears, we will appease him and make you secure." So they took the money and did as they were instructed; and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.'

## **The Great Commission**

### **Matthew 28:16-20** (Mark 16:14-8, Luke 24:36-49, John 20:19-23)

'Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had appointed for them. When they saw Him, they worshiped Him; but some doubted. And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, "All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age." Amen.'

### **-Right Foundation**

One of the most important things we need to establish in our pursuit of The Great Commission is that it needs to be anchored in the reality of the Greatest Commandment (Matthew 22:36-40). Our first ministry has to be to The Lord and out of that place of intimacy and relationship we are then able to fulfill the Great Commission far more effectively as we will have His Heart established in ours as we seek to represent Him to a lost and dying world.



# Mark



# Mark Overview

## **The Beginning**

**Ch 1:1-1:13**

John The Baptist  
Jesus Baptism  
Jesus in The Desert

## **Jesus Galilean Ministry**

**Ch 1:14-9:50**

Capernaum  
The Twelve Apostles  
Mighty Works

## **Jesus Judean Ministry**

**Ch 10-16**

Across The Jordan  
Jerusalem  
The Crucifixion  
The Resurrection



## **Week Six**

The Suffering Servant	119
Parables and Demons	129

## **Week Seven**

Signs, Wonders and Revelation	139
From The Jordan to Jerusalem	149

## **Week Eight**

Tribulation and Betrayal	161
Crucifixion and Ascension	171



# Mark: Week Six

## Session One

### The Suffering Servant

The Gospel of Mark was written by the apostle Peter's assistant and this Gospel account we have from Mark was most likely the Gospel that Peter himself preached and taught throughout his ministry and lifetime. It was written after Peter's death and most likely written during a fierce persecution that Nero had started against the Christians of The Roman Empire.

It is the shortest of the four Gospels in terms of chapters and content but it records the same accounts as the other Gospels with much more detail as it is the most descriptive of all The Gospels. It was directed at a Roman and Gentile audience and is written in a narrative style as Mark would often allude to things that were coming and would then be made clear as The Gospel continued to unfold.

Now it doesn't have a listed genealogy like the other three Gospels, but that is because Mark's focus was on The Gospel of Jesus as The Suffering Servant and a servant had no need to show their lineage as they belonged to another and not themselves.

#### **Isaiah 52:13-15**

'Behold, My Servant shall deal prudently; He shall be exalted and extolled and be very high. Just as many were astonished at you, so His visage was marred more than any man, and His form more than the sons of men; So shall He sprinkle many nations. Kings shall shut their mouths at Him; for what had not been told them they shall see, and what they had not heard they shall consider.'

As where Matthew highlighted what Jesus Fulfilled and said, Mark emphasizes what Jesus did and how He worked and demonstrated His Power. Mark's Gospel is one of action and deeds and that is very indicative of this being The Gospel Peter preached as he was a man of action. There are two parables that are unique to Mark, The Parable of The Growing Seed (Mark 4:26-29) and The Parable used to teach the disciples to keep watch for His Return (Mark 13:32-37). The term 'son of man' is the most used name for Jesus as it appears fourteen times and is the perfect term for Messiah to be used in Mark's Gospel as it embodies the humility of Messiah as the suffering servant and then points to the future Glory of Messiah which is previewed in His Ascension.

So let's begin to unpack The Gospel of Mark and you will see that it reads like a blockbuster film full of action and details, moving quickly through the three and a half years of Jesus' Ministry up to His Death and Resurrection.

## **John Prepares The Way**

**Mark 1:1-8** (Matthew 3:1-12, Luke 3:1-20, John 1:19-28)

'The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. As it is written in the Prophets: "Behold, I send My messenger before Your face, Who will prepare Your way before You." "The voice of one crying in the wilderness: 'Prepare the way of the LORD; Make His paths straight.' " John came baptizing in the wilderness and preaching a baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. Then all the land of Judea, and those from Jerusalem, went out to him and were all baptized by him in the Jordan River, confessing their sins. Now John was clothed with camel's hair and with a leather belt around his waist, and he ate locusts and wild honey. And he preached, saying, "There comes One after me who is mightier than I, whose sandal strap I am not worthy to stoop down and loose. I indeed baptized you with water, but He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit."

### **-Nazarite**

John the Baptist was actually one of only a handful of recorded Nazirites (Numbers 6:1-21) in the Scriptures, the others being Samson, Samuel and Paul. A Nazarite wouldn't cut their hair and would be set apart and would not touch any produce of the vine and keep themselves away from dead bodies. Now what makes John quite unique as a Nazarite is that he didn't choose his vow but it was ordained of him by The Lord (Luke 1:5) much like Samson (Judges 13) and he would be filled with spirit from birth. This is because of his role as a forerunner to Jesus that he was filled with the spirit as that would be one of the main fruits of Jesus's Ministry and Mandate, that God would dwell within man and not just with him.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Malachi 3:1 "'Behold, I send My messenger, and he will prepare the way before Me. And the Lord, whom you seek, will suddenly come to His temple, even the Messenger of the covenant, in whom you delight. Behold, He is coming," Says the LORD of hosts.'

Isaiah 40:3 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness: "Prepare the way of the LORD; Make straight in the desert A highway for our God.'

## **John Baptizes Jesus**

**Mark 1:9-11** (Matthew 3:13-17, Luke 3:21-22, John 1:29-34)

'It came to pass in those days that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized by John in the Jordan. And immediately, coming up from the water, He saw the heavens parting and the Spirit descending upon Him like a dove. Then a voice came from heaven, "You are My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

### **-Open Heavens**

Here at the Baptism of Jesus we see Holy Spirit descending from heaven upon Jesus and remaining upon Him. This shows us that there is an open heavens above Jesus wherever He walked (as it is not written that heavens closed back up) and it is that reality that we as believers can walk in as we allow Christ to be formed within us (Galatians 4:19) and we learn to submit to the leading of Holy Spirit.



## Satan Temps Jesus

**Mark 1:12-13** (Matthew 4:1-11, Luke 4:1-13)

'Immediately the Spirit **drove** Him into the wilderness. And He was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted by Satan, and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered to Him.'

ἐκβάλλω

Strong's G1544

ekbállō, ek-bal'-lo; from G1537 and G906; to eject (literally or figuratively):—bring forth, cast (forth, out), drive (out), expel, leave, pluck (pull, take, thrust) out, put forth (out), send away (forth, out).

### -Drove Out

Sometimes we think the only way Holy Spirit leadings is through this gentle wooing and soft touch, and sometime He does, but we don't really think of Holy Spirit aggressively expelling Jesus into the desert. The word used here in the Greek shows us that is is precisely how Holy Spirit moved upon Jesus to enter in the temptation of the wilderness. The church has taught that The Holy Spirit is a gentlemen and will only ever do things in a gentle way, but that isn't Biblical. He is God and can do as He Pleases as demonstrated here with the aggressive movings of His Spirit upon Jesus.

### -Forty

What Israel couldn't do in forty years of desert wanderings Jesus was able to fulfill in forty days. Everything that Jesus began with the Covenants of The Old Testament, He would be the fulfillment and completion of in His First Coming through to His Return. His time in the desert actually restored what was lost by Israel in their desert season as He came out of that wilderness in the fulness of The Promise and Power, as where Israel couldn't take hold of the fulness of what was promised and ultimately needed The Messiah to fulfill what they couldn't.

## Jesus Begins His Galilean Ministry

**Mark 1:14-15** (Matthew 4:12-17, Luke 4:14-15)

'Now after John was put in prison, Jesus came to Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, and saying, "The **time** is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand. Repent, and believe in the gospel.'"

καιρός

Strong's G2540

kairós, kahee-ros'; of uncertain affinity; an occasion, i.e. set or proper time:—X always, opportunity, (convenient, due) season, (due, short, while) time, a while.

### -Kairos Time

Throughout the scriptures we have this very concept of Kairos time being expressed in a variety of terms and in many different places; Time of Life (Genesis 18:10), Signs of The Times (Matthew 16:3), Times and Seasons (Acts 1:17) just to name a few. But what this Greek word is actually communicating is that this isn't just ordinary time, but in fact a Divine moment of time that is under The Hand and Authority of The Father. This was the preordained time for The Ministry of Jesus to begin.

## **The First Disciples Called**

**Mark 1:16-20** (Matthew 4:18-22, Luke 5:1-11)

'And as He walked by the Sea of Galilee, He saw Simon and Andrew his brother casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen. Then Jesus said to them, "Follow Me, and I will make you become fishers of men." They immediately left their nets and followed Him. When He had gone a little farther from there, He saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the boat mending their nets. And immediately He called them, and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after Him.'

### **-Andrew, Peter, James and John**

These four boys from Galilee had the privilege of being the first disciples called by Jesus and they also had another thing going for them. They were actually business partners in their fishing boats (Luke 5:10) as they would work together to bring in the catch and then share the profits. So Jesus called them all together to begin to work as partners in a new business of fishing for men and sharing in the rewards of their labors together. Jesus used this strength of connection in the years of following Him when He would gather them aside as His inner circle (except for Andrew) to give them specific insight and understanding that would be of vital importance to their mission and function as leaders.

## **Jesus Casts out an Unclean Spirit**

**Mark 1:21-28** (Luke 4:31-37)

'Then they went into Capernaum, and immediately on the Sabbath He entered the synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at His teaching, for He taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes. Now there was a man in their synagogue with an unclean spirit. And he cried out, saying, "Let us alone! What have we to do with You, Jesus of Nazareth? Did You come to destroy us? I know who You are—the Holy One of God!" But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be quiet, and come out of him!" And when the unclean spirit had convulsed him and cried out with a loud voice, he came out of him. Then they were all amazed, so that they questioned among themselves, saying, "What is this? What new doctrine is this? For with authority He commands even the unclean spirits, and they obey Him." And immediately His fame spread throughout all the region around Galilee.'

### **-The Fame of Jesus**

When Jesus ministered in power He was demonstrating what The Father was like. But we find that the primary purpose of the healing and deliverance ministry of The New Testament is directed at spreading the fame of Jesus. That Jesus would be lifted up, that His Name would be exalted and He would then draw all men unto Himself (John 12:32).

## **Peters Mother In-Law**

**Mark 1:29-31** (Matthew 8:14-15, Luke 38-29)

'Now as soon as they had come out of the synagogue, they entered the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. But Simon's wife's mother lay sick with a fever, and they told Him about her at once. So He came and took her by the hand and lifted her up, and immediately the fever left her. And she served them.'

## Many Healed After Sabbath Sunset

**Mark 1:32-34** (Matthew 8:16-17, Luke 4:40-41)

'At evening, when the sun had set, they brought to Him all who were sick and those who were demon-possessed. And the whole city was gathered together at the door. Then He healed many who were sick with various diseases, and cast out many demons; and He did not allow the demons to speak, because they knew Him.'

### -Capernaum

In these two verses we see a remarkable healing outpouring that we could easily overlook if we don't examine the context. Capernaum had a population of about 1500 at the time of these verses and if only a third of the village had a healing need, that is at least five hundred miracles recorded in just this short passage of scripture.

## Preaching In Galilee

**Mark 1:35-39** (Matthew 4:23-25, Luke 4:42-44)

'Now in the morning, having risen a long while before daylight, He went out and departed to a solitary place; and there He prayed. And Simon and those who were with Him searched for Him. When they found Him, they said to Him, "Everyone is looking for You." But He said to them, "Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also, because for this purpose I have come forth." And He was preaching in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and casting out demons.'

### -Casting Out Demons

Mark has a special focus here in making sure that the preaching of The Gospel is connected to the casting out of demons. The Holy Spirit through Mark's writing is showing us that The Gospel is at its core a battle between The Kingdom of God and the dominion of darkness (Colossians 1:13). It also shows us that many healing needs that were being presented had their root in the demonic realm.

## Jesus Cleanses a Leper

**Mark 1:40-45** (Matthew 8:1-4, Luke 5:12-16)

'Now a leper came to Him, imploring Him, kneeling down to Him and saying to Him, "If You are willing, You can make me clean." Then Jesus, moved with compassion, stretched out His hand and touched him, and said to him, "I am willing; be cleansed." As soon as He had spoken, immediately the leprosy left him, and he was cleansed. And He strictly warned him and sent him away at once, and said to him, "See that you say nothing to anyone; but go your way, show yourself to the priest, and offer for your cleansing those things which Moses commanded, as a testimony to them." However, he went out and began to proclaim it freely, and to spread the matter, so that Jesus could no longer openly enter the city, but was outside in deserted places; and they came to Him from every direction.'

### **-Deserted Places**

Jesus wasn't out to win a popularity contest nor was He after the strength of men to propel His Mission. He relied solely upon The Fathers leading by Holy Spirit (John 5:19) so when men began to flock to Him in the cities The Father had Him withdraw to the deserted places so that He could see who were truly hungry for Him as they would make the journey out to the places that were not popular and required effort to get to. Sometime The Father will lead us into seasons where it seems deserted to see just how hungry we are to find and follow Him.

### **Jesus Forgives and Heals a Paralytic**

**Mark 2:1-12** (Matthew 9:2-8, Luke 5:17-26)

'And again He entered Capernaum after some days, and it was heard that He was in the house. Immediately many gathered together, so that there was no longer room to receive them, not even near the door. And He preached the word to them. Then they came to Him, bringing a paralytic who was carried by four men. And when they could not come near Him because of the crowd, they uncovered the roof where He was. So when they had broken through, they let down the bed on which the paralytic was lying. When Jesus saw their faith, He said to the paralytic, "Son, your sins are forgiven you." And some of the scribes were sitting there and reasoning in their hearts, "Why does this Man speak blasphemies like this? Who can forgive sins but God alone?" But immediately, when Jesus perceived in His spirit that they reasoned thus within themselves, He said to them, "Why do you reason about these things in your hearts? Which is easier, to say to the paralytic, 'Your sins are forgiven you,' or to say, 'Arise, take up your bed and walk'? But that you may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins"—He said to the paralytic, I say to you, arise, take up your bed, and go to your house." Immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went out in the presence of them all, so that all were amazed and glorified God, saying, "We never saw anything like this!"

### **-Their Faith**

Now this is an unusual situation to say the least. First of all the roof that the friends dug through wasn't just a pile of palm branches, it was wood with a mud render which had to be set as one piece (meaning that this was a costly invitation for the owner of this house to have Jesus in his home). That took some time, strength and determination for them to dig through. Second it was the faith of the paralytic's friends that Jesus accredited to his healing. This shows us that we have to have a faith that will break through on behalf of those who cannot breakthrough for themselves regardless of the obstacles or the cost.

### **Matthew The Tax Collector**

**Mark 2:13-17** (Matthew 9:9-13, Luke 5:27-32)

'Then He went out again by the sea; and all the multitude came to Him, and He taught them. As He passed by, He saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the tax office. And He said to him, "Follow Me." So he arose and followed Him. Now it happened, as He was dining in Levi's house, that many tax collectors and sinners also sat together with Jesus and His disciples; for there were many, and they followed Him.

And when the scribes and Pharisees saw Him eating with the tax collectors and sinners, they said to His disciples, "How is it that He eats and drinks with tax collectors and sinners?" When Jesus heard it, He said to them, "Those who are well have no need of a physician, but those who are sick. I did not come to call the righteous, but sinners, to repentance."

### **-Those Who Are Sick**

Those who recognized their need for Jesus were always the ones who found their needs met. The humble and broken will never be turned away from Jesus as they recognize their need for Him. The self righteous and the proud will not receive from Him because they believe they have no need of Him (that's the Pharisees) and will in fact be resisted by Him (James 4:6-7) unless they humble themselves and repent. He came for those He would receive Him as the only answer and not just another way to be considered.

### **Questioned About Fasting**

**Mark 2:18-22** (Matthew 9:14-17, Luke 5:33-39)

'The disciples of John and of the Pharisees were fasting. Then they came and said to Him, "Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but Your disciples do not fast?" And Jesus said to them, "Can the friends of the bridegroom fast while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast. But the days will come when the bridegroom will be taken away from them, and then they will fast in those days. No one sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; or else the new piece pulls away from the old, and the tear is made worse. And no one puts new wine into old wineskins; or else the new wine bursts the wineskins, the wine is spilled, and the wineskins are ruined. But new wine must be put into new wineskins."

### **-New Wine**

This new wine that Jesus is teaching about is actually the New Covenant that will be brought forth through His Death and Resurrection and in order for us to enter into that same wine we need to die and be raised new in Him. A wineskin is made by something giving up its life in order the skin to be made available to be used to store that new wine. The way the wine ferments in the bag in new skin is it expands as the wine produces gas in the fermentation process and the new skin has the ability to grow and stretch in the process. The Old Wineskin (The Law) wouldn't be flexible to expand with the new wine that was coming through Christ so a new vessel must be made and He made that vessel within Himself that we might enter in though our own Death and Resurrection with Him. Prayer and fasting actually help to keep our wineskins flexible and able to expand as The Spirit continues to grow and fashion Christ within us.

### **Jesus is Lord of The Sabbath**

**Mark 2:23-28** (Matthew 12:1-8, Luke 6:1-5)

'Now it happened that He went through the grainfields on the Sabbath; and as they went His disciples began to pluck the heads of grain. And the Pharisees said to Him, "Look, why do they do what is not lawful on the Sabbath?" But He said to them, "Have you never read what David did when he was in need and hungry, he and those with him: how he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the

high priest, and ate the showbread, which is not lawful to eat except for the priests, and also gave some to those who were with him?" And He said to them, "The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath. Therefore the Son of Man is also Lord of the Sabbath."

### **-David as Shadow and Type**

David was from Judah and this reference from the Old Testament is a prophetic sign post to a new priesthood (Hebrews 7:17) who would come from tribe of Judah (Revelation 5:5) that would serve mankind with the true bread of heaven (John 6:32).

## **Healing on The Sabbath**

**Mark 3:1-6** (Matthew 12:9-14, Luke 6:6-11)

'And He entered the synagogue again, and a man was there who had a withered hand. So they watched Him closely, whether He would heal him on the Sabbath, so that they might accuse Him. And He said to the man who had the withered hand, "Step forward." Then He said to them, "Is it lawful on the Sabbath to do good or to do evil, to save life or to kill?" But they kept silent. And when He had looked around at them with anger, being grieved by the hardness of their hearts, He said to the man, "Stretch out your hand." And he stretched it out, and his hand was restored as whole as the other. Then the Pharisees went out and immediately plotted with the Herodians against Him, how they might destroy Him.'

### **-Pharisees and Herodians**

These two camps aren't traditionally found together in the culture of the day, in fact they couldn't be more different. The Herodians were followers of Herod and supported his rule even though he was put into power by Rome who were oppressing the Jews and The Pharisees who were teaching their own traditions as being equal to the Law and who despised Rome. But they found common ground in their desire to remove Jesus, the question is why? The Gospel that Jesus both lived and preached, challenged both camps' compromises and self-righteousness with truth of God. They didn't want to acknowledge their error and become transformed so they decided to end the source of the confrontation by trying to eliminate Jesus.

## **A Great Multitude Follow Jesus**

**Mark 3:7-12** (Matthew 12:15-21)

'But Jesus withdrew with His disciples to the sea. And a great multitude from Galilee followed Him, and from Judea and Jerusalem and Idumea and beyond the Jordan; and those from Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they heard how many things He was doing, came to Him. So He told His disciples that a small boat should be kept ready for Him because of the multitude, lest they should crush Him. For He healed many, so that as many as had afflictions pressed about Him to touch Him. And the unclean spirits, whenever they saw Him, fell down before Him and cried out, saying, "You are the Son of God." But He sternly warned them that they should not make Him known.'

## The Twelve Apostles

**Mark 3:13-19** (Matthew 10:1-4, Luke 6:12-16)

'And He went up on the mountain and called to Him those He Himself wanted. And they came to Him. Then He appointed twelve, that they might be with Him and that He might send them out to **preach**, and to have power to heal sicknesses and to cast out demons: Simon, to whom He gave the name Peter; James the son of Zebedee and John the brother of James, to whom He gave the name Boanerges, that is, "Sons of Thunder"; Andrew, Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, Thaddaeus, Simon the Cananite; and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed Him. And they went into a house.'

**κηρύσσω**

Strong's G2784

kērýssō, kay-roos'-so; of uncertain affinity; to herald (as a public crier), especially divine truth (the gospel):  
—preacher(-er), proclaim, publish.

### -Be With Him

The first thing that the apostles were called to before anything else was to be with Him. Jesus wanted relationship to be of first importance more than function as He was initiating a Kingdom based on relationship and family.

### -Preach

The word used here for preach is actually the same Greek word used for a herald or public crier. The Disciples were to discharge their ministry in a very public fashion as heralds of The Kingdom of God bringing forth the message in both word and demonstration. Because we know they had been walking with Jesus for at least 1/1.5 years at this point they would have seen this modeled every day in a very public way.

## A House Divided

**Mark 3:20-27** (Matthew 12:22-30, Luke 11:14-23)

'Then the multitude came together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. But when His own people heard about this, they went out to lay hold of Him, for they said, "He is out of His mind." And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem said, "He has Beelzebub," and, "By the ruler of the demons He casts out demons." So He called them to Himself and said to them in parables: "How can Satan cast out Satan? If a kingdom is divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house is divided against itself, that house cannot stand. And if Satan has risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but has an end. No one can enter a strong man's house and plunder his goods, unless he first binds the strong man. And then he will plunder his house.'"

### -The Stronger Man

As we have seen in Matthew there are many components to this interaction between Jesus and the Scribes and Pharisees, but in the midst of insults and accusations we see Jesus laying down a foundation for all power and deliverance ministry for us to build on. That is that a stronger man will always win when it comes to power and plunder. It doesn't matter what strong man we might be facing in life, a persons

bondage or even a regional spirit when we build our faith on this truth, Jesus is The Stronger Man in every situation we face and He Alone possesses the keys we need to see the strong man cast down and bound.

### **The Unforgivable Sin**

**Mark 3:28-30** (Matthew 12:31-32, Luke 12:10)

“Assuredly, I say to you, all sins will be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they may utter; but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is subject to eternal condemnation” because they said, “He has an unclean spirit.”

### **Jesus Mother and Brothers**

**Mark 3:31-35** (Matthew 12:46-50, Luke 8:9-21)

“Then His brothers and His mother came, and standing outside they sent to Him, calling Him. And a multitude was sitting around Him; and they said to Him, “Look, Your mother and Your brothers are outside seeking You.” But He answered them, saying, “Who is My mother, or My brothers?” And He looked around in a circle at those who sat about Him, and said, “Here are My mother and My brothers! For whoever does the will of God is My brother and My sister and mother.”

### **-Family Can Be an Idol**

Now this subject can be a little touchy some times as families are near and dear to our hearts, and rightfully so, but they should always be kept in the proper alignment when it comes to heart allegiance and Jesus. Idolatry can seem like a foreign concept as we don't carry little bronze statues around with us of the things that our heart are attached to, but we commit idolatry at times ignorantly of what it really means. A simple definition of idolatry is this: any created thing (that's everything by the way) that is exalted and valued above the Uncreated One (that's God) is an idol. Family has the potential to take this place of allegiance in our hearts if we are not careful and diligent to make sure that our hearts are given to God above all things.



# Mark: Week Six

## Session Two

### Parables and Demons

Jesus has called the twelve disciples to be with Him as He continues to teach and demonstrate The Gospel of The Kingdom. In this session we see Jesus begin to teach in parables as even though we are only a few chapters into Mark we will find that the events recorded in chapter four onward are about an year and a half into the Ministry of Jesus which means that Israel has already begun to reject Him at this point. Now within the parables Jesus teaches in this passage of Scripture we have the parable of the growing seed that is unique only to Mark and we also see Jesus being referred to as Mary's son which most likely was an insult in reference to what would have been seen as his illegitimate birth in His Hometown.

He continues to demonstrate The Character of The Father through deliverance, Lordship over creation, multiplication miracles, raising the dead, healing and He also commissions the twelve to do the works of The Kingdom. He is building towards the days when He will no longer be bodily with His Disciples as He teaches them repentance as a cornerstone to The Gospel being preached and that power will accompany The Kingdom being established.

#### The Parable of The Sower

**Mark 4:1-9** (Matthew 13:1-9, Luke 8:4-8)

'And again He began to teach by the sea. And a great multitude was gathered to Him, so that He got into a boat and sat in it on the sea; and the whole multitude was on the land facing the sea. Then He taught them many things by parables, and said to them in His teaching: "Listen! Behold, a sower went out to sow. And it happened, as he sowed, that some seed fell by the wayside; and the birds of the air came and devoured it. Some fell on stony ground, where it did not have much earth; and immediately it sprang up because it had no depth of earth. But when the sun was up it was scorched, and because it had no root it withered away. And some seed fell among thorns; and the thorns grew up and choked it, and it yielded no crop. But other seed fell on good ground and yielded a crop that sprang up, increased and produced: some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred." And He said to them, "He who has ears to hear, let him hear!"'

## **The Purpose of Parables**

**Mark 4:10-12** (Matthew 13:10-17, Luke 8:9-10)

'But when He was alone, those around Him with the twelve asked Him about the parable. And He said to them, "To you it has been given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but to those who are outside, all things come in parables, "so that 'Seeing they may see and not perceive, and hearing they may hear and not understand; lest they should turn, and their sins be forgiven them.' ""

### **-To Teach His Own**

Jesus began shift His public teaching ministry into teaching through parables after He was rejected by the Pharisees (Matthew 12 ) and here in Mark we see the motive behind that shift. That He would teach His Own 'the mysteries of the kingdom of God' as they would be the ones who would carry The Gospel after His Death and Resurrection. There were a lot of people coming to see and receive the miracles but there were very few that wanted to know the meaning behind what Jesus was saying. This dynamic is expressed in Proverbs 25:2 'It is the glory of God to conceal a matter, But the glory of kings is to search out a matter. ' and shows that these things are hidden for us to pursue Him in relationship for in as He will reveal these things to us in the same manner as He did the disciples.

## **The Parable of The Sower Explained**

**Mark 4:13-20** (Matthew 13:18-21, Luke 8:11-15)

'And He said to them, "Do you not understand this parable? How then will you understand all the parables? The sower sows the word. And these are the ones by the wayside where the word is sown. When they hear, Satan comes immediately and takes away the word that was sown in their hearts. These likewise are the ones sown on stony ground who, when they hear the word, immediately receive it with gladness; and they have no root in themselves, and so endure only for a time. Afterward, when tribulation or persecution arises for the word's sake, immediately they stumble. Now these are the ones sown among thorns; they are the ones who hear the word, and the cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the desires for other things entering in choke the word, and it becomes unfruitful. But these are the ones sown on good ground, those who hear the word, accept it, and bear fruit: some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some a hundred.' ""

### **-Remaining Good Soil**

Now there is a personal application to this parable even after we have received the initial word of The Gospel. Hebrews 4:2 tells us "For indeed the gospel was preached to us as well as to them; but the word which they heard did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in those who heard it." There is a responding to the word that is required of us that applies to even the rhema word of God that The Spirit quickens to our hearts from The Bible or from a prophetic promise. If we hear the word and don't mix it with faith, it will have no root within us and we will not produce a crop or receive what The Lord is promising us. We need to keep our hearts free of worry, and concern if we want that seed to produce what it was purposed for.

## **Light Under a Basket**

### **Mark 4:21-25** (Luke 8:16-18)

'Also He said to them, "Is a lamp brought to be put under a basket or under a bed? Is it not to be set on a lampstand? For there is nothing hidden which will not be revealed, nor has anything been kept secret but that it should come to light. If anyone has ears to hear, let him hear." Then He said to them, "Take heed what you hear. With the same measure you use, it will be measured to you; and to you who hear, more will be given. For whoever has, to him more will be given; but whoever does not have, even what he has will be taken away from him.'"

### **-The Hungry Get Fed**

Truth is supposed to be seen and not hidden and here Jesus uses a very simply parable to convey that what He is teaching them isn't to remain with them only. It is to be the shared 'Good News' that is to go to all who would receive it and recognized it as the truth. Jesus also makes another statement here to show that it will be the hungry who receive more 'and to you who hear, more will be given' and not those who are content to hear a nice parable and not take ahold of its meaning and application.

## **The Parable of The Growing Seed**

### **Mark 4:26-29**

'And He said, "The kingdom of God is as if a man should scatter seed on the ground, and should sleep by night and rise by day, and the seed should sprout and grow, he himself does not know how. For the earth yields crops by itself: first the blade, then the head, after that the full grain in the head. But when the grain ripens, immediately he puts in the sickle, because the harvest has come.'"

### **-One Waters Another Sows**

This parable is unique to Mark and in it Jesus is showing us a multifaceted truth when it comes to The Kingdom. First of all it is showing us that The Kingdom of God will continue to advance throughout time until the harvesting of the Earth according to The Fathers Seasons and Timings (Acts 1:7). It also shows us that it is the seed that contains the harvest and not the farmers methods. Paul so eloquently brings it forth in 1 Corinthians 3:6 'I planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the increase.' in that we have a partnership with The Lord but ultimately it is God Who brings the increase.

## **The Parable of The Mustard Seed**

### **Mark 4:30-32** (Matthew 13:31-32, Luke 13:18-19)

'Then He said, "To what shall we liken the kingdom of God? Or with what parable shall we picture it? It is like a mustard seed which, when it is sown on the ground, is smaller than all the seeds on earth; but when it is sown, it grows up and becomes greater than all herbs, and shoots out large branches, so that the birds of the air may nest under its shade.'"

## **Jesus Use of Parables**

### **Mark 4:33-34**

'And with many such parables He spoke the word to them as they were able to hear it. But without a parable He did not speak to them. And when they were alone, He explained all things to His disciples.'

### **-Change in Public Ministry**

From this point on Jesus would only speak in parables publicly as He knew that they had a hardness of heart towards what He was saying and it was their own hearts that had kept them from being able to see or hear what Jesus was saying. He only disclosed the meaning of the parables to His disciples as they would be the ones who would not only hear and see but also become the very witnesses and heralds to all the He spoke and did.

## **The Winds and The Waves**

### **Mark 4:35-41** (Matthew 8:23-27, Luke 8:22-25)

'On the same day, when evening had come, He said to them, "Let us cross over to the other side." Now when they had left the multitude, they took Him along in the boat as He was. And other little boats were also with Him. And a great windstorm arose, and the waves beat into the boat, so that it was already filling. But He was in the stern, asleep on a pillow. And they awoke Him and said to Him, "Teacher, do You not care that we are perishing?" Then He arose and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea, "Peace, be still!" And the wind ceased and there was a great calm. But He said to them, "Why are you so fearful? How is it that you have no faith?" And they feared exceedingly, and said to one another, "Who can this be, that even the wind and the sea obey Him!"'

### **-Peace**

Mark records this storm with one detail that neither Matthew nor Luke records, Jesus was napping on a pillow. Sometimes the most spiritual thing you can do is take a nap! After He is woken up Jesus responds to this situation as only He can do. He stands up as the Prince of Peace (Isaiah 9:6) and releases that reality into the storm.

### **-Unveiling Revelation**

Now its important to note the disciples response to this miracle and demonstration of the Authority of Jesus, that they were marked with The Fear of The Lord (Isaiah 9:1-3). Even though the disciples had been walking with Jesus for at least a year and half, they just encountered a new facet of His Nature that they hadn't previously seen. We need to make sure that we are continually in a place of discovering more about His Character and Nature that we haven't previously seen before as He continues to unveil and reveal Himself in intimacy.

## **The Gadarene Demoniac**

**Mark 5:1-20** (Matthew 8:28-9:1, Luke 8:26-39)

'Then they came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Gadarenes. And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no one could bind him, not even with chains, because he had often been bound with shackles and chains. And the chains had been pulled apart by him, and the shackles broken in pieces; neither could anyone tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying out and cutting himself with stones. When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. And he cried out with a loud voice and said, "What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God that You do not torment me." For He said to him, "Come out of the man, unclean spirit!" Then He asked him, "What is your name?" And he answered, saying, "My name is Legion; for we are many." Also he begged Him earnestly that He would not send them out of the country. Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. So all the demons begged Him, saying, "Send us to the swine, that we may enter them." And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then the unclean spirits went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and drowned in the sea. So those who fed the swine fled, and they told it in the city and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that had happened. Then they came to Jesus, and saw the one who had been demon-possessed and had the legion, sitting and clothed and in his right mind. And they were afraid. And those who saw it told them how it happened to him who had been demon-possessed, and about the swine. Then they began to plead with Him to depart from their region. And when He got into the boat, he who had been demon-possessed begged Him that he might be with Him. However, Jesus did not permit him, but said to him, "Go home to your friends, and tell them what great things the Lord has done for you, and how He has had compassion on you." And he departed and began to proclaim in Decapolis all that Jesus had done for him; and all marveled.'

### **-He Worshipped Him**

Now this man had been demon possessed for quite some time and was so supernaturally strong that he could break chains and shackles, would cut himself and in Luke's Gospel we see that he is also naked. Yet when Jesus approaches him, the man worships Him! This is an incredible picture of what postures us for deliverance in The Kingdom, a heart that will worship before that breakthrough and not just after!

### **-Territorial Spirit**

The Apostle Paul tells us that the spiritual realm of the demonic is layered and organized (Ephesians 6:12) and it would appear that legion was a territorial spirit assigned to a geographic region. Now this is just a thought, but it would stand to reason given that legion didn't want to leave the country and would have rather have been cast into pigs than leave his geographic assignment.

### **-The Fear of The Lord**

Now once the man had been delivered we see a very interesting response to this amazing miracle. They wanted Jesus to leave. The people were afraid and it would appear that is was because when Jesus moved in authority towards legion He did so in the Fear of The Lord and the Holiness of God. These people couldn't stand to be in that atmosphere and asked Him to leave so that they could escape their own possible convictions that they were under as a result of God's Holiness being made manifest.

### **-Evangelist to The Gentiles**

Now instead of having the newly delivered man come and follow Him, Jesus sent him as an evangelist to the ten Greek cities of Decapolis as a living testimony of the power of The Gospel.

### **A Girl Resurrects and a Woman Healed**

**Mark 5:21-43** (Matthew 9:18-26, Luke 8:40-56)

'Now when Jesus had crossed over again by boat to the other side, a great multitude gathered to Him; and He was by the sea. And behold, one of the rulers of the synagogue came, Jairus by name. And when he saw Him, he fell at His feet and begged Him earnestly, saying, "My little daughter lies at the point of death. Come and lay Your hands on her, that she may be healed, and she will live." So Jesus went with him, and a great multitude followed Him and thronged Him. Now a certain woman had a flow of blood for twelve years, and had suffered many things from many physicians. She had spent all that she had and was no better, but rather grew worse. When she heard about Jesus, she came behind Him in the crowd and touched His garment. For she said, "If only I may touch His clothes, I shall be made well." Immediately the fountain of her blood was dried up, and she felt in her body that she was healed of the affliction. And Jesus, immediately knowing in Himself that power had gone out of Him, turned around in the crowd and said, "Who touched My clothes?" But His disciples said to Him, "You see the multitude thronging You, and You say, 'Who touched Me?' " And He looked around to see her who had done this thing. But the woman, fearing and trembling, knowing what had happened to her, came and fell down before Him and told Him the whole truth. And He said to her, "Daughter, your faith has made you well. Go in peace, and be healed of your affliction." While He was still speaking, some came from the ruler of the synagogue's house who said, "Your daughter is dead. Why trouble the Teacher any further?" As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, He said to the ruler of the synagogue, "Do not be afraid; only believe." And He permitted no one to follow Him except Peter, James, and John the brother of James. Then He came to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and saw a tumult and those who wept and wailed loudly. When He came in, He said to them, "Why make this commotion and weep? The child is not dead, but sleeping." And they ridiculed Him. But when He had put them all outside, He took the father and the mother of the child, and those who were with Him, and entered where the child was lying. Then He took the child by the hand, and said to her, "Talitha, cumi," which is translated, "Little girl, I say to you, arise." Immediately the girl arose and walked, for she was twelve years of age. And they were overcome with great amazement. But He commanded them strictly that no one should know it, and said that something should be given her to eat.'

### **-Honor**

This is actually quite an important key the it comes to the ministry of healing and at times gets overlooked. When we see Jesus in Galilee in the next chapter of Mark (Mark 6:1-6) talking on the reality of a prophet being without honor in their hometown, we find that it was a result of their lack of honor for Him that unbelief was produced in the people of that region. The woman who had the issue of blood had no problem in honoring Jesus and it was this posture that pulled on the anointing of Jesus and released her healing. Honor isn't flattery or even a way of interacting to get yourself noticed by the right people but it is in fact rightly seeing who the person in front of you is in the spirit and rightly acknowledging it.

### **-Daughter**

As we have explained in Matthew this lady was most likely a Gentile and due to her uncleanness had been an outcast during all of those long twelve years of suffering and spending all she had on doctors to no avail. She not only got healed, but in Jesus stopping and acknowledging her and her healing He restored her standing in the community as she was no longer an outcast or unclean. In calling her daughter He was prophetically pointing to the spirit of adoption (Romans 8:15) that would come as a result of The Cross to all He would receive Him.

### **Jesus Rejected at Nazareth**

**Mark 6:1-6** (Matthew 13:53-58, Luke 4:16-30)

'Then He went out from there and came to His own country, and His disciples followed Him. And when the Sabbath had come, He began to teach in the synagogue. And many hearing Him were astonished, saying, "Where did this Man get these things? And what wisdom is this which is given to Him, that such mighty works are performed by His hands! Is this not the carpenter, the Son of Mary, and brother of James, Joses, Judas, and Simon? And are not His sisters here with us?" So they were offended at Him. But Jesus said to them, "A prophet is not without honor except in his own country, among his own relatives, and in his own house." Now He could do no mighty work there, except that He laid His hands on a few sick people and healed them. And He marveled because of their unbelief. Then He went about the villages in a circuit, teaching.'

### **-Mighty Works**

Now this is an interesting dynamic at play here. They acknowledged that Jesus was performing mighty works and was walking and teaching in a wisdom that was not human but yet they are unable to get over the familiarity they have with Him.

### **-Prophet Without Honor**

Now this is actually of benefit to those who are called as prophets, even though it doesn't seem like it would be. Once people get familiar with the voice of a prophet as they build relationship with them, that same voice that used to carry weight and authority can actually lose its edge because of familiarity and being a part of the furniture, so to speak. Prophets need to be in relationship and connection with the body as being a lone wolf is hugely unhealthy for prophetic people, but they do need a certain amount of distance to keep their voice sharp and their authority in place. Lack of honor helps them to cleave even deeper to The Lord.

### **Sending Out The Twelve**

**Mark 6:7-13** (Matthew 10:1, 10:5-15, Luke 9:1-6)

'And He called the twelve to Himself, and began to send them out two by two, and gave them power over unclean spirits. He commanded them to take nothing for the journey except a staff—no bag, no bread, no copper in their money belts—but to wear sandals, and not to put on two tunics. Also He said

to them, "In whatever place you enter a house, stay there till you depart from that place. And whoever will not receive you nor hear you, when you depart from there, shake off the dust under your feet as a testimony against them. Assuredly, I say to you, it will be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment than for that city!" So they went out and preached that people should repent. And they cast out many demons, and anointed with oil many who were sick, and healed them.'

### **-Nothing For The Journey**

Jesus instructions to the twelve really places them to see how The Gospel is to be lived out. Jesus tells them to take nothing for the journey as He is teaching them to rely on The Father for their daily bread and that they would see the words of Jesus lived out from the sermon on the mount (Matthew 6:25-34).

### **-Anointing With Oil**

Marks' Gospel is the only one that actually records anointing with oil and praying for the sick by the disciples. This is actually going to be instructed later in The Scriptures in James 5:14 'Is anyone among you sick? Let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord.' and is an overlooked key in praying for the sick.

### **John The Baptist is Beheaded**

#### **Mark 6:14-29** (Matthew 14:1-12, Luke 9:7-9)

'Now King Herod heard of Him, for His name had become well known. And he said, "John the Baptist is risen from the dead, and therefore these powers are at work in him." Others said, "It is Elijah." And others said, "It is the Prophet, or like one of the prophets." But when Herod heard, he said, "This is John, whom I beheaded; he has been raised from the dead!" For Herod himself had sent and laid hold of John, and bound him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his brother Philip's wife; for he had married her. Because John had said to Herod, "It is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife." Therefore Herodias held it against him and wanted to kill him, but she could not; or Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just and holy man, and he protected him. And when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly. Then an opportune day came when Herod on his birthday gave a feast for his nobles, the high officers, and the chief men of Galilee. And when Herodias' daughter herself came in and danced, and pleased Herod and those who sat with him, the king said to the girl, "Ask me whatever you want, and I will give it to you." He also swore to her, "Whatever you ask me, I will give you, up to half my kingdom." So she went out and said to her mother, "What shall I ask?" And she said, "The head of John the Baptist!" Immediately she came in with haste to the king and asked, saying, "I want you to give me at once the head of John the Baptist on a platter." And the king was exceedingly sorry; yet, because of the oaths and because of those who sat with him, he did not want to refuse her. Immediately the king sent an executioner and commanded his head to be brought. And he went and beheaded him in prison, brought his head on a platter, and gave it to the girl; and the girl gave it to her mother. When his disciples heard of it, they came and took away his corpse and laid it in a tomb.'



## Feeding The Five Thousand

**Mark 6:30-44** (Matthew 14:13-21, Luke 9:10-17, John 6:1-14)

'Then the apostles gathered to Jesus and told Him all things, both what they had done and what they had taught. And He said to them, "Come aside by yourselves to a deserted place and rest a while." For there were many coming and going, and they did not even have time to eat. So they departed to a deserted place in the boat by themselves. But the multitudes saw them departing, and many knew Him and ran there on foot from all the cities. They arrived before them and came together to Him. And Jesus, when He came out, saw a great multitude and was moved with compassion for them, because they were like sheep not having a shepherd. So He began to teach them many things. When the day was now far spent, His disciples came to Him and said, "This is a deserted place, and already the hour is late. Send them away, that they may go into the surrounding country and villages and buy themselves bread; for they have nothing to eat." But He answered and said to them, "You give them something to eat." And they said to Him, "Shall we go and buy two hundred denarii worth of bread and give them something to eat?" But He said to them, "How many loaves do you have? Go and see." And when they found out they said, "Five, and two fish." Then He commanded them to make them all sit down in groups on the green grass. So they sat down in ranks, in hundreds and in fifties. And when He had taken the five loaves and the two fish, He looked up to heaven, blessed and broke the loaves, and gave them to His disciples to set before them; and the two fish He divided among them all. So they all ate and were filled. And they took up twelve baskets full of fragments and of the fish. Now those who had eaten the loaves were about five thousand men.'

### -Sheep Without a Shepherd

Now Jesus can see plainly that this people are leaderless and like sheep without a shepherd, so moved with compassion He spent most of the day feeding them spiritually and healing their sick. He then takes it further to show that The Gospel also meets the particle needs of humanity as well (James 2:14-17), by putting on a meal that they will not forget.

### -Sitting Down

Now with a group that large it would seem wise to keep everyone standing to make the distribution go a little smoother, but Jesus is actually setting a dinner/banquet scene with Him being the host. He is not just providing for their needs but is actually showing Gods extravagance towards them as they become guests of The King!

## Jesus Walks on Water

**Mark 6:45-52** (Matthew 14:22-33, John 6:15-21)

'Immediately He made His disciples get into the boat and go before Him to the other side, to Bethsaida, while He sent the multitude away. And when He had sent them away, He departed to the mountain to pray. Now when evening came, the boat was in the middle of the sea; and He was alone on the land. Then He saw them straining at rowing, for the wind was against them. Now about the fourth watch of the night He came to them, walking on the sea, and would have passed them by. And when they saw Him walking on the sea, they supposed it was a ghost, and cried out; for they all saw Him and were troubled.

But immediately He talked with them and said to them, "Be of good cheer! It is I; do not be afraid." Then He went up into the boat to them, and the wind ceased. And they were greatly amazed in themselves beyond measure, and marveled. For they had not understood about the loaves, because their heart was hardened.'

### **-Lord Over Creation**

Now this is the second storm miracle that we see the disciples walking though with Jesus but this time they are on their own in the boat when the storm begins. The interesting thing is that Jesus walks as if to go past them until they begin to cry out in fear and once He is in the boat with them the storm ceases. Mark records that 'For they had not understood about the loaves, because their heart was hardened.' because Jesus has demonstrated time and again that He is The Lord over Creation and their hearts didn't see that truth being demonstrated in the feeding of the five thousand.

### **-Transportation Miracle**

Now just as a fun fact John records a piece of this miracle that the other Gospels do not. John 6:21 'Then they willingly received Him into the boat, and immediately the boat was at the land where they were going.'. Up until that moment that were struggling at the oars and about half way across the sea which means that not only did the storm stop once He entered the boat, but that same boat transported over to the other side instantly in a remarkable transportation miracle!

### **Many Are Made Well**

#### **Mark 6:53-56 (Matthew 14:34-36)**

'When they had crossed over, they came to the land of Gennesaret and anchored there. And when they came out of the boat, immediately the people recognized Him, ran through that whole surrounding region, and began to carry about on beds those who were sick to wherever they heard He was. Wherever He entered, into villages, cities, or the country, they laid the sick in the marketplaces, and begged Him that they might just touch the hem of His garment. And as many as touched Him were made well.'

# Mark: Week Seven

## Session One

### Signs, Wonders and Revelation

In tonight session we continue to see Jesus being challenged by the Pharisees and Scribes in regards to their own customs and not the Law, about of all things hand washing. Mark actually then explains the tradition of ceremonial washing which shows us further evidence that he is writing The Gospel to the Romans and Gentiles as this would be quite foreign to them. Jesus uses this as an opportunity to begin to unpack the theme of the heart that he has building on since the beginning of His Public Ministry, as it is really the heart of man that has made him unclean and not unwashed hands.

From there Jesus begins to minister to the regions of Tyre and Sidon and from there down to Decapolis where He performs His Second multiplication miracle in feeding the four thousand and then Mark brings us to the Transfiguration, Peter's revelation of the Christ and we finish out first session with Jesus teaching that we will be salted with fire which is only recorded in Marks Gospel.

### Defilement From Within

#### **Mark 7:1-23** (Matthew 15:1-20)

'Then the Pharisees and some of the scribes came together to Him, having come from Jerusalem. Now when they saw some of His disciples eat bread with defiled, that is, with unwashed hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees and all the Jews do not eat unless they wash their hands in a special way, holding the tradition of the elders. When they come from the marketplace, they do not eat unless they wash. And there are many other things which they have received and hold, like the washing of cups, pitchers, copper vessels, and couches. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked Him, "Why do Your disciples not walk according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?" He answered and said to them, "Well did Isaiah prophesy of you **hypocrites**, as it is written: This people honors Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. And in vain they worship Me, Teaching as doctrines the commandments of men.' For laying aside the commandment of God, you hold the tradition of men—the washing of pitchers and cups, and many other such things you do." He said to them, "All too well you reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your tradition. For Moses said, 'Honor your father and your mother'; and, 'He who curses father or mother, let him be put to death.' But you say, 'If a man says to his father or mother, "Whatever profit you might have received from me is Corban"—' (that is, a gift to God), then you no longer let him do anything for his father or his mother, making the word of God of no effect through your tradition which you have handed down. And many such things you do." When He had called all the multitude to Himself, He said to them, "Hear Me, everyone, and understand: There is nothing that enters a man from outside which can defile him; but the things which come out of him,

those are the things that defile a man. If anyone has ears to hear, let him hear!" When He had entered a house away from the crowd, His disciples asked Him concerning the parable. So He said to them, "Are you thus without understanding also? Do you not perceive that whatever enters a man from outside cannot defile him, because it does not enter his heart but his stomach, and is eliminated, thus purifying all foods?" And He said, "What comes out of a man, that defiles a man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lewdness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness. All these evil things come from within and defile a man."

### ὕποκριτής

Strong's G5273

hypokritēs, hoop-ok-ree-tace'; from G5271; an actor under an assumed character (stage-player), i.e. (figuratively) a dissembler ("hypocrite":—hypocrite.  
-an actor, stage player

### -Hypocrites

Jesus used a very specific term when He responded to the Pharisees and Scribes which is actually taken from the Greek word used for an actor or one who wears the mask. Jesus has no problem pointing out to the Pharisees and Scribes that who they present themselves to be the world isn't who they really are. They are putting on a religious show for the approval and applause of man just like an actor does on the stage and are more concerned with their own traditions than they were the truth of the Law. They were more interested in being seen to be right than really being right. One of the hallmarks of pharisaical behavior is the willingness to crucify truth on the altars of tradition, convenience, comfort and control. This is why we need to keep our hearts constantly before The Lord in prayer and in His Word we can very quickly become like the Pharisees in our motives becoming more concerned with appearing to be Godly than actually being Godly.

### -Doctrines of Men

Now the Pharisees had build a hedge around the Law of their own traditions and customs that they were holding to an equal value with the Law. This is one of the main rebukes that Jesus has for them as they have become blinded to their own behavior forgetting that the doctrines of men can never be equal to The Law and Word of God. We need to be very careful that the teachings we sit under and agree with are not just tradition but are in fact grounded in The Word of God.

### -Prophecy Fulfilled

Isaiah 29:13 'Therefore the Lord said: "Inasmuch as these people draw near with their mouths and honor Me with their lips, But have removed their hearts far from Me, And their fear toward Me is taught by the commandment of men,"

### A Gentile Shows Her Faith

#### Mark 7:24-30 (Matthew 15:21-28)

'From there He arose and went to the region of Tyre and Sidon. And He entered a house and wanted no one to know it, but He could not be hidden. For a woman whose young daughter had an unclean spirit heard about Him, and she came and fell at His feet. The woman was a Greek, a Syro-Phoenician by birth,

and she kept asking Him to cast the demon out of her daughter. But Jesus said to her, "Let the children be filled first, for it is not good to take the children's bread and throw it to the little dogs." And she answered and said to Him, "Yes, Lord, yet even the little dogs under the table eat from the children's crumbs." Then He said to her, "For this saying go your way; the demon has gone out of your daughter." And when she had come to her house, she found the demon gone out, and her daughter lying on the bed.'

### **-Canaanite or Greek?**

In Matthew this Gentile woman is actually listed as a Canaanite but here in Mark she is listed as 'Greek, a Syro-Phoenician by birth,' but where is she actually from? The Greek word used is actually to denote a non-Jew or Gentile and Syro-Phoenician is the region and Roman province she is from (Phoenicia of Syria) which is actually in the Land of Canaan. So in the natural that is three strikes against her being able to access a Jewish Messiah. But Jesus sees the heart of this mother and as a prophetic foretaste of The Gospel going out to all humanity regardless of ancestry and origin, He delivers her daughter (but not until He has tested her faith).

### **Jesus Heals a Deaf-Mute**

**Mark 7:31-37** (Matthew 15:29-31)

'Again, departing from the region of Tyre and Sidon, He came through the midst of the region of Decapolis to the Sea of Galilee. Then they brought to Him one who was deaf and had an impediment in his speech, and they begged Him to put His hand on him. And He took him aside from the multitude, and put His fingers in his ears, and He spat and touched his tongue. Then, looking up to heaven, He **sighed**, and said to him, "Ephphatha," that is, "Be opened." Immediately his ears were opened, and the impediment of his tongue was loosed, and he spoke plainly. Then He commanded them that they should tell no one; but the more He commanded them, the more widely they proclaimed it. And they were astonished beyond measure, saying, "He has done all things well. He makes both the deaf to hear and the mute to speak."'

**στενάζω**

Strong's G4727

stenázō, sten-ad'-zo; from G4728; to make (intransitively, be) in straits, i.e. (by implication) to sigh, murmur, pray inaudibly:—with grief, groan, grudge, sigh.

### **-Sigh**

This is the only time we see this kind of response from Jesus in any of the Gospels and it is an unusual response to a healing need being presented at face value but the real key here is the Greek word that Holy Spirit used to document this miracle. The Greek word used here actually has prayer included in this sigh from Jesus inner most being and is a root for word in passage in Scripture that will help us understand how Jesus is ministering in The Spirit here. In Romans 8:26 it's written 'Likewise the Spirit also helps in our weaknesses. For we do not know what we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit Himself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.' and the root word for 'groanings' in this passage is the same word used here for sigh in the miracle of the deaf mute. The Holy Spirit is moving inwardly in Jesus during this miracle as the helper working with the inward groanings of His Spirit and from there the miraculous power is being released through the pray/sigh of Jesus.

## Jesus Feeds The Four Thousand

### Mark 8:1-10 (Matthew 15:32-39)

'In those days, the multitude being very great and having nothing to eat, Jesus called His disciples to Him and said to them, "I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now continued with Me three days and have nothing to eat. And if I send them away hungry to their own houses, they will faint on the way; for some of them have come from afar." Then His disciples answered Him, "How can one satisfy these people with bread here in the wilderness?" He asked them, "How many loaves do you have?" And they said, "Seven." So He commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground. And He took the seven loaves and gave thanks, broke them and gave them to His disciples to set before them; and they set them before the multitude. They also had a few small fish; and having blessed them, He said to set them also before them. So they ate and were filled, and they took up seven large baskets of leftover fragments. Now those who had eaten were about four thousand. And He sent them away, immediately got into the boat with His disciples, and came to the region of Dalmanutha.'

### -Their Own Bread

When the miracle of feeding the five thousand happened it was actually the bread and fishes of a small boy that was multiplied to perform the miracle (John 6:9). When it comes to now having the same miraculous need and situation in front of them, it is now the disciples own bread that is used for the miracle. The miracle takes place in the same way, with the disciples seeing the bread and fish multiply in their own hands but this time they were also not only able to participate in this miracle but they were able to contribute to it as well. There is an invitation for us from The Lord to not only participate in the miraculous but also to partner with what He is desiring to come forth in the earth.

## The Pharisees Seek a Sign

### Mark 8:11-12 (Matthew 16:1-4)

'Then the Pharisees came out and began to dispute with Him, seeking from Him a sign from heaven, **testing Him**. But He sighed deeply in His spirit, and said, "Why does this generation seek a sign? Assuredly, I say to you, no sign shall be given to this generation.'"

πειράζω

Strong's G3985

peirázō, pi-rad'-zo; from G3984; to test (objectively), i.e. endeavor, scrutinize, entice, discipline:—assay, examine, go about, prove, tempt(-er), try.  
-to try or test one's faith, virtue, character, by enticement to sin

### -Tempt

The Pharisee's request was directed towards Jesus being tempted to perform a miracle under His Own Will and this would have been a violation of His Mandate to only do what He saw The Father Do (John 5:19). The word used in the Greek implies that the temptation would be unto a sin, so for Jesus this could have been counted as disobedience and meant that He wouldn't have been able to be the spotless Lamb who takes away the sins of The World (John 1:29).

## **The Leaven of The Pharisees and Herod**

### **Mark 8:13-21** (Matthew 16:5-12)

'And He left them, and getting into the boat again, departed to the other side. Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, and they did not have more than one loaf with them in the boat. Then He charged them, saying, "Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod." And they reasoned among themselves, saying, "It is because we have no bread." But Jesus, being aware of it, said to them, "Why do you reason because you have no bread? Do you not yet perceive nor understand? Is your heart still hardened? Having eyes, do you not see? And having ears, do you not hear? And do you not remember? When I broke the five loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments did you take up?" They said to Him, "Twelve." Also, when I broke the seven for the four thousand, how many large baskets full of fragments did you take up?" And they said, "Seven." So He said to them, "How is it you do not understand?"'

### **-No Bread**

When Jesus is teaching the disciples to be aware of the leavening influence of the Pharisees and Herodians they looked at His Words through a very natural lens instead of the spiritual. They began to reason like mere men that it was because they didn't bring any bread and Jesus addresses this natural way of thinking by pointing out to them that He is Lord over Creation as He demonstrated in both of the multiplication feeding miracles. His Kingdom and Way of Thinking wasn't dependent on natural resources but was dependent on the Authority and Resources of The Father in Heaven.

## **The Healing at Bethsaida**

### **Mark 8:22-26**

'Then He came to Bethsaida; and they brought a blind man to Him, and begged Him to touch him. So He took the blind man by the hand and led him out of the town. And when He had spit on his eyes and put His hands on him, He asked him if he saw anything. And he looked up and said, "I see men like trees, walking." Then He put His hands on his eyes again and made him look up. And he was restored and saw everyone clearly. Then He sent him away to his house, saying, "Neither go into the town, nor tell anyone in the town."'

### **-Spitting**

At the time the blind were believed to be cursed and with that they were regularly spat at and upon as a sign of their curse. Imagine for a second that you are the blind man and you have just asked Jesus to touch you for healing and the very next thing you hear is the sound of spit. The very same sound you have heard all your days as people spat in your direction and reinforced your shame and blindness. That was the same sound that Jesus used in this healing. He took the very thing that was cursing him and used it for his healing making him not only see but become from free the shame and constant cursing he had endured all those years he had to beg for his survival.

## **Peter Confesses Jesus is The Christ**

**Mark 8:27-30** (Matthew 16:13-20, Luke 9:18-20)

'Now Jesus and His disciples went out to the towns of Caesarea Philippi; and on the road He asked His disciples, saying to them, "Who do men say that I am?" So they answered, "John the Baptist; but some say, Elijah; and others, one of the prophets." He said to them, "But who do you say that I am?" Peter answered and said to Him, "You are the Christ." Then He strictly warned them that they should tell no one about Him.'

### **-Who Do You Say I Am?**

It wasn't enough to hear what everyone else was saying about Him, Jesus wanted His disciples to answer for themselves from the heart, as to who they saw Him as. We have to have a personal conviction of who He is. Having a secondhand knowledge of who He is won't be enough to help us walk through the seasons of life as they unfold, we need to know who He is!

## **Jesus Prophesies His Death and Resurrection**

**Mark 8:31-33** (Matthew 16:21-23, Luke 9:21-22)

'And He began to teach them that the Son of Man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. He spoke this word openly. Then Peter took Him aside and began to rebuke Him. But when He had turned around and looked at His disciples, He rebuked Peter, saying, "Get behind Me, Satan! For you are not mindful of the things of God, but the things of men.'"

### **-Openly**

This is the first of three prophetic insights that Jesus gives concerning His Death and Resurrection and even includes those who will be involved. What makes this particular prophetic insight different from the other two is that Jesus says this openly and not just to His disciples. To those who would have been listening this would have not been what they would have expected from Messiah, that He Himself would be talking about His own Death so openly and plainly and this wouldn't sound like the speech of a conquering King. But Jesus has no issue with His Mission as He was Born to Die and with that create a new and living way (Hebrews 10:20) for all who would receive Him.

## **Take Up Your Cross**

**Mark 8:34-38** (Matthew 16:24-27, Luke 9:23-26)

'When He had called the people to Himself, with His disciples also, He said to them, "Whoever desires to come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow Me. For whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake and the gospel's will save it. For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world, and loses his own soul? Or what will a man give in exchange for his soul? For whoever is ashamed of Me and My words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him the Son of Man also will be ashamed when He comes in the glory of His Father with the holy angels.'"



## The Transfiguration

**Mark 9:1-13** (Matthew 16:28-17:13, Luke 9:27-36)

'And He said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you that there are some standing here who will not taste death till they see the kingdom of God present with power." Now after six days Jesus took Peter, James, and John, and led them up on a high mountain apart by themselves; and He was **transfigured** before them. His clothes became shining, exceedingly white, like snow, such as no launderer on earth can whiten them. And Elijah appeared to them with Moses, and they were talking with Jesus. Then Peter answered and said to Jesus, "Rabbi, it is good for us to be here; and let us make three tabernacles: one for You, one for Moses, and one for Elijah"—because he did not know what to say, for they were greatly afraid. And a cloud came and overshadowed them; and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, "This is My beloved Son. Hear Him!" Suddenly, when they had looked around, they saw no one anymore, but only Jesus with themselves. Now as they came down from the mountain, He commanded them that they should tell no one the things they had seen, till the Son of Man had risen from the dead. So they kept this word to themselves, questioning what the rising from the dead meant. And they asked Him, saying, "Why do the scribes say that Elijah must come first?" Then He answered and told them, "Indeed, Elijah is coming first and restores all things. And how is it written concerning the Son of Man, that He must suffer many things and be treated with contempt? But I say to you that Elijah has also come, and they did to him whatever they wished, as it is written of him.'"

μεταμορφῶ

Strong's G3339

metamorphōō, met-am-or-fo'-o; from G3326 and G3445; to transform (literally or figuratively, "metamorphose"):—change, transfigure, transform.  
-to change into another form, to transform, to transfigure

### -Transfigured

Now the Greek word used here to transfigure is actually only used four times in the entire Bible. It is actually the same used to in Romans 12:2 'And do not be conformed to this world, but be **transformed** by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.' and in 2 Corinthians 3:18 'But we all, with unveiled face, beholding as in a mirror the glory of the Lord, are being **transformed** into the same image from glory to glory, just as by the Spirit of the Lord.' This encounter with Jesus is a prophetic picture of what begins to happen in our innermost being as we yield to the inner transformative work of Holy Spirit and we begin to be full of the Glory of The Lord.

### -Hear Him

What an incredible moment to witness for Peter, James and John as they truly saw and beheld His Glory (John 1:14). Not only that but they heard the voice of The Father give one of the most clear and simple commands for us to take a hold of in walking out own discipleship. "This is My beloved Son. Hear Him!" It is often the most simple truths that have the most profound effect, The Father Himself shows us just how simple our walk with Jesus should be. We need to Hear Him and Him alone!

## A Boy Is Healed

**Mark 9:14-29** (Matthew 17:14-21, Luke 9:37-42)

'And when He came to the disciples, He saw a great multitude around them, and scribes disputing with them. Immediately, when they saw Him, all the people were greatly amazed, and running to Him, greeted Him. And He asked the scribes, "What are you discussing with them?" Then one of the crowd answered and said, "Teacher, I brought You my son, who has a mute spirit. And wherever it seizes him, it throws him down; he foams at the mouth, gnashes his teeth, and becomes rigid. So I spoke to Your disciples, that they should cast it out, but they could not." He answered him and said, "O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you? How long shall I bear with you? Bring him to Me." Then they brought him to Him. And when he saw Him, immediately the spirit convulsed him, and he fell on the ground and wallowed, foaming at the mouth. So He asked his father, "How long has this been happening to him?" And he said, "From childhood. And often he has thrown him both into the fire and into the water to destroy him. But if You can do anything, have compassion on us and help us." Jesus said to him, "If you can believe, all things are possible to him who believes." Immediately the father of the child cried out and said with tears, "Lord, I believe; help my unbelief!" When Jesus saw that the people came running together, He rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to it: "Deaf and dumb spirit, I command you, come out of him and enter him no more!" Then the spirit cried out, convulsed him greatly, and came out of him. And he became as one dead, so that many said, "He is dead." But Jesus took him by the hand and lifted him up, and he arose. And when He had come into the house, His disciples asked Him privately, "Why could we not cast it out?" So He said to them, "This kind can come out by nothing but prayer and fasting.'

## Jesus Prophecies Again

**Mark 9:30-32** (Matthew 17:22-23, Luke 9:43-45)

'Then they departed from there and passed through Galilee, and He did not want anyone to know it. For He taught His disciples and said to them, "The Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of men, and they will kill Him. And after He is killed, He will rise the third day." But they did not understand this saying, and were afraid to ask Him.'

## Who Is The Greatest?

**Mark 9:33-37** (Matthew 18:1-5, Luke 9:46-48)

'Then He came to Capernaum. And when He was in the house He asked them, "What was it you disputed among yourselves on the road?" But they kept silent, for on the road they had disputed among themselves who would be the greatest. And He sat down, called the twelve, and said to them, "If anyone desires to be first, he shall be last of all and servant of all." Then He took a little child and set him in the midst of them. And when He had taken him in His arms, He said to them, "Whoever receives one of these little children in My name receives Me; and whoever receives Me, receives not Me but Him who sent Me.'"

### **-Greatness Isn't Forbidden**

Now as we saw in Matthew Jesus teaches the disciples what greatness really looks like, but the interesting thing to note is that He doesn't forbid seeking greatness. He gives a new paradigm to power and strength when He shows them that greatness is being like a child who have no great strength within themselves. Weakness is actually true strength in The Kingdom as it cause us to become dependent on Him alone as our source and ability (2 Corinthians 12:9).

### **Jesus Forbids Sectarianism**

**Mark 9:38-41** (Matthew 10:40-42, Luke 9:49-50)

'Now John answered Him, saying, "Teacher, we saw someone who does not follow us casting out demons in Your name, and we forbade him because he does not follow us." But Jesus said, "Do not forbid him, for no one who works a miracle in My name can soon afterward speak evil of Me. For he who is not against us is on our side. For whoever gives you a cup of water to drink in My name, because you belong to Christ, assuredly, I say to you, he will by no means lose his reward.'"

### **-The Right Message**

When Jesus responds to John forbidding someone doing the work of The Kingdom He gives a very interesting instruction. "Do not forbid him, for no one who works a miracle in My name can soon afterward speak evil of Me. For he who is not against us is on our side." Now Paul picks up a similar theme in Philippians 1:15-18 'Some indeed preach Christ even from envy and strife, and some also from goodwill: The former preach Christ from selfish ambition, not sincerely, supposing to add affliction to my chains; but the latter out of love, knowing that I am appointed for the defense of the gospel. What then? Only that in every way, whether in pretense or in truth, Christ is preached; and in this I rejoice, yes, and will rejoice.' Both of these passages of Scripture are addressing that the right message was being spoken and demonstrated and they should rejoice that Jesus is being proclaimed. They aren't giving permission to a false unity where a different message is being proclaimed and that we should celebrate it any way for the sake of 'unity' but are both saying that when those who aren't connected to you are proclaiming the True Christ do not hinder them but recognize that they are working towards the same goal as you.

### **Jesus Warns of Offenses**

**Mark 9:42-48** (Matthew 18:6-9, Luke 17:1-2)

""But whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in Me to stumble, it would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were thrown into the sea. If your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter into life maimed, rather than having two hands, to go to hell, into the fire that shall never be quenched—where 'Their worm does not die, and the fire is not quenched.' And if your foot causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter life lame, rather than having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that shall never be quenched—where Their worm does not die, and the fire is not quenched.' And if your eye causes you to sin, pluck it out. It is better for you to enter the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire—where 'Their worm does not die, and the fire is not quenched.' ""

## **-Tasteless Salt is Worthless**

### **Mark 9:49-50**

“For everyone will be seasoned with fire, and every sacrifice will be seasoned with salt. Salt is good, but if the salt loses its flavor, how will you season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace with one another.”

### **-Holy Spirit**

Salt was actually a component to the offerings made by fire in Leviticus and the symbolism of salt being used here by Jesus is to represent the purification and preserving that happens as a result of fire of Holy Spirit resting on believers (Matthew 3:11 , Acts 2:1-4) to enable them to become living sacrifices (Romans 12:1). It is The Holy Spirit filling and baptizing believers that keeps them anchored in covenant (salt) and fuels them in worship and a lifestyle of devotion as well as brings them into unity and community.

# Mark: Week Seven

## Session Two

### From The Jordan To Jerusalem

We see Jesus beginning to move out of Galilee and into the region of Judea by the Jordan River. He is heading towards Jerusalem and His Destiny as He continues to prophesy His own Death and Resurrection to the disciples, challenge the understanding of marriage and divorce and heal a blind man. Mark's Gospel is the only one to name Bartimaeus as the blind man and that isn't a surprise as we have seen that Mark is very detailed orientated and includes very descriptive words in His telling of the same passages found in the other Gospels.

Jesus is welcomed into Jerusalem with an amazing display of celebration before He cleanses the Temple again and continues to challenge the Pharisees, chief priests, Scribes and Sadducees as they try to catch Him out in His Words. Once again Mark's emphasis on Jesus as the suffering servant is highlighted as He continues to hold out the way of Truth to a stiff necked people who are plotting to have Him killed and He remains faithful to serve His Fathers Will at all times.

### Marriage and Divorce

#### **Mark 10:1-12** (Matthew 19:1-9)

'Then He arose from there and came to the region of Judea by the other side of the Jordan. And multitudes gathered to Him again, and as He was accustomed, He taught them again. The Pharisees came and asked Him, "Is it lawful for a man to divorce his wife?" testing Him. And He answered and said to them, "What did Moses command you?" They said, "Moses permitted a man to write a certificate of divorce, and to dismiss her." And Jesus answered and said to them, "Because of the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept. "But from the beginning of the creation, God 'made them male and female.' 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh'; so then they are no longer two, but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate." In the house His disciples also asked Him again about the same matter. So He said to them, "Whoever divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery against her. And if a woman divorces her husband and marries another, she commits adultery.'"

## **Jesus Blesses The Children**

**Mark 10:13-16** (Matthew 19:13-15, Luke 18:15-17)

'Then they brought little children to Him, that He might touch them; but the disciples rebuked those who brought them. But when Jesus saw it, He was greatly displeased and said to them, "Let the little children come to Me, and do not forbid them; for of such is the kingdom of God. Assuredly, I say to you, whoever does not receive the kingdom of God as a little child will by no means enter it." And He took them up in His arms, laid His hands on them, and blessed them.'

### **-Receiving The Kingdom**

Jesus gives the disciples a response that they were maybe not expecting once they had tried to keep the children away from Him. That The Kingdom belongs to such as these and unless they can receive The Kingdom like a child they will be able not enter in. Once again childlike faith is being reinforced as the currency and entry point of The Kingdom and this would have struck a blow against the disciples self sense of importance in this moment when trying to move the children away.

## **The Rich Young Ruler**

**Mark 10:17-22** (Matthew 19:16-22, Luke 18:18-23)

'Now as He was going out on the road, one came running, knelt before Him, and asked Him, "Good Teacher, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?" So Jesus said to him, "Why do you call Me good? No one is good but One, that is, God. You know the commandments: 'Do not commit adultery,' 'Do not murder,' 'Do not steal,' 'Do not bear false witness,' 'Do not defraud,' 'Honor your father and your mother.' " And he answered and said to Him, "Teacher, all these things I have kept from my youth." Then Jesus, looking at him, loved him, and said to him, "One thing you lack: Go your way, sell whatever you have and give to the poor, and you will have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the cross, and follow Me." But he was sad at this word, and went away sorrowful, for he had great possessions.'

### **-Good**

Jesus question to the rich young ruler here proposes an interesting thought. Was Jesus asking the young ruler if he recognized him as God? He states 'Why do you call Me good? No one is good but One, that is, God.' in such a way as to possibly ask 'Are you calling me good because you see Who I really am?' Just an interesting thought.

### **-Jesus, Looking At Him, Loved Him**

Mark is the only one to record this particular phrase during the exchange between the rich young ruler and Jesus. Jesus didn't chase after the rich long ruler nor did He change the standard so that he might be included, but His Love for him let him walk away. Sometimes people need to walk in the fulness of their choices before they can really see what is being offered to them in Jesus. We need to make sure that we have enough wisdom to let some walk away and not chase them down or change the standard.

## **With God All Things Are Possible**

**Mark 10:23-31** (Matthew 19:23-30, Luke 18:24-30)

'Then Jesus looked around and said to His disciples, "How hard it is for those who have riches to enter the kingdom of God!" And the disciples were astonished at His words. But Jesus answered again and said to them, "Children, how hard it is for those who trust in riches to enter the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God." And they were greatly astonished, saying among themselves, "Who then can be saved?" But Jesus looked at them and said, "With men it is impossible, but not with God; for with God all things are possible." Then Peter began to say to Him, "See, we have left all and followed You." So Jesus answered and said, "Assuredly, I say to you, there is no one who has left house or brothers or sisters or father or mother or wife or children or lands, for My sake and the gospel's, who shall not receive a hundredfold now in this time—houses and brothers and sisters and mothers and children and lands, with persecutions—and in the age to come, eternal life. But many who are first will be last, and the last first.'"

### **-Context**

One of the things about The Bible is that there is a context to the things that are promised and stated. We have made 'for with God all things are possible.' into a faith statement that isn't totally incorrect but isn't fully correct either. The context that Jesus is speaking in here is the salvation of mankind, not destiny, increase and favor. There is a principle here that is true but we have applied it at times in the church in a way that doesn't honor the fulness of what Jesus is saying. There are some things that God cannot do: He cannot bless the works of the flesh, He cannot go against His Word and He can't do what He said He wouldn't do.

### **-The Promises of God**

Among the things that Jesus promised His disciples along with lands, houses, mothers, brothers and sisters was persecution. It isn't a new paradigm for the church to be persecuted but it is one that will continue to increase in the days ahead. It does put an added context to 2 Corinthians 1:20 'For all the promises of God in Him are Yes, and in Him Amen, to the glory of God through us.' but it does all lead to the age to come in which we are promised eternal life!

## **Jesus Prophecies a Third Time**

**Mark 10:32-34** (Matthew 20:17-19, Luke 18:30-34)

'Now they were on the road, going up to Jerusalem, and Jesus was going before them; and they were amazed. And as they followed they were afraid. Then He took the twelve aside again and began to tell them the things that would happen to Him: "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of Man will be betrayed to the chief priests and to the scribes; and they will condemn Him to death and deliver Him to the Gentiles; and they will mock Him, and scourge Him, and spit on Him, and kill Him. And the third day He will rise again.'"

## **-Enduring The Shame**

As Jesus prophesies a third time concerning what is to come when they arrive in Jerusalem He begins to unveil new details about the manner in which He will die, the process leading up to it and His Resurrection. In this third prophetic insight Jesus begins to show that He will be treated with contempt, beaten and mocked by the Gentiles specifically before He is killed.

## **Greatness Is Serving**

### **Mark 10:35-45** (Matthew 20:20-28)

'Then James and John, the sons of Zebedee, came to Him, saying, "Teacher, we want You to do for us whatever we ask." And He said to them, "What do you want Me to do for you?" They said to Him, "Grant us that we may sit, one on Your right hand and the other on Your left, in Your glory." But Jesus said to them, "You do not know what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?" They said to Him, "We are able." So Jesus said to them, "You will indeed drink the cup that I drink, and with the baptism I am baptized with you will be baptized; but to sit on My right hand and on My left is not Mine to give, but it is for those for whom it is prepared." And when the ten heard it, they began to be greatly displeased with James and John. But Jesus called them to Himself and said to them, "You know that those who are considered rulers over the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them. Yet it shall not be so among you; but whoever desires to become great among you shall be your servant. And whoever of you desires to be first shall be slave of all. For even the Son of Man did not come to be served, but to serve, and to give His life a ransom for many.'"

## **-The Cup and Baptism**

James and John are a part of Jesus inner circle along with Peter and maybe it was this proximity that caused them to ask for the privilege of sitting on either side of Him. Maybe it was that because they saw Him Transfigure that though they had a right to ask? We don't really know the motive behind the request but Jesus responds with "You do not know what you ask. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?" as an invitation for them to see what is in their hearts and future. The cup and baptism that Jesus is referring to is one of suffering. James would be the first disciple martyred and John's path wouldn't be much easier, but in the midst of the cup and baptism of suffering is the invitation to also partake of the cup of joy as this was one of the things that Jesus was anointed with above all His companions (Hebrews 1:9). It is the joy in the midst of suffering that is fuel for the fire of The Gospel and one of the things that separates us out from the world.

## **Jesus Heals Bartimaeus**

### **Mark 10:46-52** (Matthew 20:29-34, Luke 18:35-43)

'Now they came to Jericho. As He went out of Jericho with His disciples and a great multitude, blind Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, sat by the road begging. And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out and say, "Jesus, Son of David, have mercy on me!" Then many warned him to be quiet; but he cried out all the more, "Son of David, have mercy on me!" So Jesus stood still and commanded him to be called. Then they called the blind man, saying to him, "Be of good cheer. Rise, He is calling you." And throwing aside his garment, he rose and came to Jesus. So Jesus answered



and said to him, "What do you want Me to do for you?" The blind man said to Him, "Rabboni, that I may receive my sight." Then Jesus said to him, "Go your way; your faith has made you well." And immediately he received his sight and followed Jesus on the road.'

### **-The Garment**

Now this wasn't just a garment for a garments sake, this cloak would have been very specific to identifying Bartimaeus as a beggar as it would have been what he would use to gather the money giving to him as people would have thrown the coins on the cloak instead of touching him. It was a garment that showed his identity and function in society and his first response to being called by Jesus was to throw aside every past label and security as he was walking towards his miracle.

### **-Faith**

Now faith does matter to Jesus and where He saw it He made special mention of it. Bartimaeus might of not been able to see in the natural, but when he called out to Jesus as the Son of David to have mercy on him, he was attaching his faith to the mercy of Jesus. It was this act of pulling on the nature of The Messiah that Jesus responded to and Bartimaeus received what he needed. Faith attaches itself to the Nature of Jesus and this is the channel of release for The Kingdom to be made manifest in The Earth.

## **The Triumphal Entry**

**Mark 11:1-11** (Matthew 21:1-11, Luke 19:28-40, John 12:12-19)

'Now when they drew near Jerusalem, to Bethphage and Bethany, at the Mount of Olives, He sent two of His disciples; and He said to them, "Go into the village opposite you; and as soon as you have entered it you will find a colt tied, on which no one has sat. Loose it and bring it. And if anyone says to you, 'Why are you doing this?' say, 'The Lord has need of it,' and immediately he will send it here." So they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door outside on the street, and they loosed it. But some of those who stood there said to them, "What are you doing, loosing the colt?" And they spoke to them just as Jesus had commanded. So they let them go. Then they brought the colt to Jesus and threw their clothes on it, and He sat on it. And many spread their clothes on the road, and others cut down leafy branches from the trees and spread them on the road. Then those who went before and those who followed cried out, saying: "Hosanna! 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the LORD!' Blessed is the kingdom of our father David That comes in the name of the Lord! Hosanna in the highest!" And Jesus went into Jerusalem and into the temple. So when He had looked around at all things, as the hour was already late, He went out to Bethany with the twelve.'

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Zechariah 9:9 "'Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion! Shout, O daughter of Jerusalem! Behold, your King is coming to you; He is just and having salvation, lowly and riding on a donkey, a colt, the foal of a donkey.'

Psalms 118:26 'Blessed is he who comes in the name of the LORD! We have blessed you from the house of the LORD.'

## **The Fig Tree Withered**

**Mark 11:12-14** (Matthew 21:18-19)

'Now the next day, when they had come out from Bethany, He was hungry. And seeing from afar a fig tree having leaves, He went to see if perhaps He would find something on it. When He came to it, He found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs. In response Jesus said to it, "Let no one eat fruit from you ever again." And His disciples heard it.'

### **-Leaves But No Fruit**

This particular fig tree was in full leaf which meant from all appearances it should have fruit as leaves and fruit are connected. Jesus was using this natural situation to show the disciples a spiritual reality as well as a commentary on Israel. They had all the right appearance (leaves) but had produced no fruit in keeping with that outward appearance. There has to be fruit for what we believe and Jesus expects that we produce the fruit of The Kingdom if we claim to be in it.

## **Jesus Clears The Temple**

**Mark 11:15-19** (Matthew 21:12-17, Luke 19:45-48, John 2:13-22)

'So they came to Jerusalem. Then Jesus went into the temple and began to drive out those who bought and sold in the temple, and overturned the tables of the money changers and the seats of those who sold doves. And He would not allow anyone to carry wares through the temple. Then He taught, saying to them, "Is it not written, 'My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations'? But you have made it a 'den of thieves.'" And the scribes and chief priests heard it and sought how they might destroy Him; for they feared Him, because all the people were astonished at His teaching. When evening had come, He went out of the city.'

### **-Money Changers**

Now the court of the gentiles where all of the money changing was going on and it was a place where they were profiting off peoples earnest desire to honor God through offerings but it was also where they were to pay the temple tax. God's Desire is that all could come to Him and worship and not be taken advantage of those professing to be in His Service, and it was with this zeal for the Righteousness of God that Jesus cleared out all of those who were misrepresenting His Father and making a place of worship into a defiled marketplace.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 56:7 'Even them I will bring to My holy mountain, and make them joyful in My house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and their sacrifices will be accepted on My altar; for My house shall be called a house of prayer for all nations.'

Jeremiah 7:11 "'Has this house, which is called by My name, become a den of thieves in your eyes? Behold, I, even I, have seen it," says the LORD.'

## **The Lesson of The Fig Tree**

**Mark 11:20-24** (Matthew 21:20-22)

'Now in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots. And Peter, remembering, said to Him, "Rabbi, look! The fig tree which You cursed has withered away." So Jesus answered and said to them, "Have faith in God. For assuredly, I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, 'Be removed and be cast into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will be done, he will have whatever he says. Therefore I say to you, whatever things you ask when you pray, believe that you receive them, and you will have them.'

### **-Fruit and The Roots**

Now Jesus doesn't directly address this but the principle is here for us to take ahold of. It's not enough to get rid of the fruit of something in your life and not deal with the root system that caused it to grow in the first place. The fig tree was withered from the roots as when the roots are dead the rest will follow. We need to make sure that we are exposing our root system (our inner most being, beliefs and thoughts) to Jesus so that anything that isn't producing the right fruit can be dealt with.

### **-Mountains**

Now this is a word picture for anything that a believer is facing in their life and the key component that Jesus is emphasizing is to have faith in God. Not faith in your faith, or even faith in your words but that your faith is IN GOD and from that place of submission and yieldedness we can speak to the mountains we face in true faith and see them cast into the sea.

## **Forgiveness and Prayer**

**Mark 11:25-26** (Matthew 6:14-15)

""And whenever you stand praying, if you have anything against anyone, forgive him, that your Father in heaven may also forgive you your trespasses. But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father in heaven forgive your trespasses.""

### **-Prayer Posture**

One of the surest ways to have your prayer life hindered is to live in unforgiveness. It becomes the prime motivating factor behind all we do when we have unforgiveness in our heart and it is Jesus' desire that we would walk as He walked and represent The Kingdom in the right way. Prayer isn't just about sending up your request list but it is a place of heart to heart connection with God and when unforgiveness is in our heart it makes it very hard to enter into intimacy with The Lord. A forgiving heart is a tender heart that The Lord can turn in whatever direction He is leading.

## Jesus Authority Questioned

**Mark 11:27-33** (Matthew 21:23-27, Luke 20:1-8)

'Then they came again to Jerusalem. And as He was walking in the temple, the chief priests, the scribes, and the elders came to Him. And they said to Him, "By what authority are You doing these things? And who gave You this authority to do these things?" But Jesus answered and said to them, "I also will ask you one question; then answer Me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things: The baptism of John—was it from heaven or from men? Answer Me." And they reasoned among themselves, saying, "If we say, 'From heaven,' He will say, 'Why then did you not believe him?' But if we say, 'From men' "—they feared the people, for all counted John to have been a prophet indeed So they answered and said to Jesus, "We do not know." And Jesus answered and said to them, "Neither will I tell you by what authority I do these things.'"

## The Parable of The Wicked Vinedressers

**Mark 12:1-12** (Matthew 21:33-46, Luke 20:9-19)

'Then He began to speak to them in parables: "A man planted a vineyard and set a hedge around it, dug a place for the wine vat and built a tower. And he leased it to vinedressers and went into a far country. Now at vintage-time he sent a servant to the vinedressers, that he might receive some of the fruit of the vineyard from the vinedressers. And they took him and beat him and sent him away empty-handed. Again he sent them another servant, and at him they threw stones, wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully treated. And again he sent another, and him they killed; and many others, beating some and killing some. Therefore still having one son, his beloved, he also sent him to them last, saying, 'They will respect my son.' But those vinedressers said among themselves, 'This is the heir. Come, let us kill him, and the inheritance will be ours.' So they took him and killed him and cast him out of the vineyard. Therefore what will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the vinedressers, and give the vineyard to others. Have you not even read this Scripture: The stone which the builders rejected This was the LORD's doing, And it is marvelous in our eyes'? "

### -Leased

Now this word used by Jesus in this parable is very intentional. When The Lord was leading Israel out of Egypt and into The Promised Land, He told them in Leviticus 25:23 'The land shall not be sold permanently, for the land is Mine; for you are strangers and sojourners with Me.' and He gave them the understanding that they were leasing the land and not owning it. Throughout their history, as unpacked in this parable, they had lost sight of the fact that the land they lived in belonged to God and wasn't of their own doing or ability. This whole parable is Jesus telling the history of Israel back to them though their rejection of God's Leaders, Prophets and ultimately Himself as they have lost sight of the truth that it is God's Righteousness and Ability that set them apart in the first place and not their own. He then points to The Gospel going to the Gentiles as Israel will reject Lord of The Vineyard as they reject Him.

### -Prophecy Fulfilled

Psalm 118:22-23 'The stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. This was the LORD's doing; it is marvelous in our eyes.'

## **The Pharisees and Caesar**

**Mark 12:13-17** (Matthew 22:15-22, Luke 20:20-26)

'Then they sent to Him some of the Pharisees and the Herodians, to catch Him in His words. When they had come, they said to Him, "Teacher, we know that You are true, and care about no one; for You do not regard the person of men, but teach the way of God in truth. Is it lawful to pay taxes to Caesar, or not? Shall we pay, or shall we not pay?" But He, knowing their hypocrisy, said to them, "Why do you test Me? Bring Me a denarius that I may see it." So they brought it. And He said to them, "Whose image and inscription is this?" They said to Him, "Caesar's." And Jesus answered and said to them, "Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's." And they marveled at Him.'

## **The Sadducees and The Resurrection**

**Mark 12:18-27** (Matthew 22:23-33, Luke 20:27-40)

'Then some Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to Him; and they asked Him, saying: Teacher, Moses wrote to us that if a man's brother dies, and leaves his wife behind, and leaves no children, his brother should take his wife and raise up offspring for his brother. Now there were seven brothers. The first took a wife; and dying, he left no offspring. And the second took her, and he died; nor did he leave any offspring. And the third likewise. So the seven had her and left no offspring. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore, in the resurrection, when they rise, whose wife will she be? For all seven had her as wife." Jesus answered and said to them, "Are you not therefore mistaken, because you do not know the Scriptures nor the power of God? For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels in heaven. But concerning the dead, that they rise, have you not read in the book of Moses, in the burning bush passage, how God spoke to him, saying, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living. You are therefore greatly mistaken.'"

### **-The Scriptures and The Power of God**

This is such a key principle that is being expressed here by Jesus in His response to the Sadducees. The Power of God will always be connected to The Word of God. When we pursue power without the word we become unstable and easily led astray, and when we have only the word without Holy Spirit to teach and transform us we become legalistic and dry. In order for us to walk out The Gospel and walk in the fulness of resurrection life we need both The Power and The Scriptures to be established within us in equal measure for us to be able to Know Him and represent Him well.

## **The First Commandment Of All**

**Mark 12:28-34** (Matthew 22:34-40, Luke 10:25-28)

'Then one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, perceiving that He had answered them well, asked Him, "Which is the first commandment of all?" Jesus answered him, "The first of all the commandments is: 'Hear, O Israel, the LORD our God, the LORD is one. And you shall love

the LORD your God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind, and with all your strength.’ This is the first commandment. And the second, like it, is this: ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ There is no other commandment greater than these.” So the scribe said to Him, “Well said, Teacher. You have spoken the truth, for there is one God, and there is no other but He. And to love Him with all the heart, with all the understanding, with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love one’s neighbor as oneself, is more than all the whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.” Now when Jesus saw that he answered wisely, He said to him, “You are not far from the kingdom of God.” But after that no one dared question Him.’

### **-God Is One**

The ancient Near East was a society that was very different from ours. They had a pantheon of gods that they each ascribed a different function of creation to, and had a particular set of rituals in order to invoke the supposed nature of those gods on their behalf. Now we know that these are in fact demons who are set up in the heavenly places according to rank and function (Ephesians 6:12), which presented themselves to humanity as gods. They would war with one another in the eyes of people who served them and there wasn’t a unity amongst their gods in their eyes. Now for God To Declare That He is One is a drastically counter cultural statement in the climate it was spoken in. That this Oneness would be expressed in Three Distinct Persons (The Trinity) is foundational to our understanding of the assignment of Jesus, The Work of The Holy Spirit and The Nature of The Father. They are One but distinct in Their Personalities and in one accord for Their Plans for Redemption.

### **-Not Far From The Kingdom**

This is the only time in all of The Gospels that we see Jesus make this statement towards someone and what makes it more remarkable is that He is addressing a Scribe, a group that He typically rebuked. This particular Scribe answered wisely in Jesus’s eyes from The Law when He responded to Jesus’s answer and it was this understanding of the Character of God that had him close to entering the Kingdom. Some of the least likely people are at times the ones closest to The Kingdom and we need to make sure that we don’t just look at the outward man but begin to see the heart of people.

### **How Can David Call His Descendant Lord?**

**Mark 12:35-37** (Matthew 22:41-46, Luke 20:41-44)

‘Then Jesus answered and said, while He taught in the temple, “How is it that the scribes say that the Christ is the Son of David? For David himself said by the Holy Spirit: ‘The LORD said to my Lord, “Sit at My right hand, Till I make Your enemies Your footstool.”’ Therefore David himself calls Him ‘Lord’; how is He then his Son?” And the common people heard Him gladly.’

### **-Stewarding Mysteries**

The Scribes were educated in The Law and The Prophets and had responsibility to teach others what they learned and it is this group that Jesus references when asking the question about how is the Messiah David’s Son and Lord. Jesus is pointing out a mystery to them to see if their hearts will respond in hunger and humility to what they do not understand. There is a tension that we need to walk in when

it comes to understanding and The Word and that is learning how to live in and steward the mysteries of The Word. As much as we can study in this lifetime there will still be so much that we haven't plumbed or understood when it comes to God. It is so well put in 1 Corinthians 4:1 'Let a man so consider us, as servants of Christ and stewards of the mysteries of God.' that as we serve Christ and The Gospel we are stewarding mysteries and things that we do not have a full understanding of and that is by design. Mystery causes us to have to trust The Lord more than we trust our own understanding and it is in that place the He begins to reveal the very mysteries we have held in our hearts as we grow and mature in Him.

### **-Prophecy Being Fulfilled**

Psalm 110:1 'A Psalm of David. The LORD said to my Lord, "Sit at My right hand, till I make Your enemies Your footstool."'

### **Beware of The Scribes**

**Mark 12:38-40** (Matthew 23:1-7, Luke 20:45-47)

'Then He said to them in His teaching, "Beware of the scribes, who desire to go around in long robes, love greetings in the marketplaces, the best seats in the synagogues, and the best places at feasts, who devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers. These will receive greater condemnation.'"

### **-To Be Seen**

The Scribes loved to be seen, served and honored and as the Scribes couldn't be paid for teaching but they could receive gifts of support. They used this to sadly make themselves wealthy by pressuring the vulnerable into giving large gifts (that's the widows' houses) as if it was a righteous thing to do. This is the opposite of what The Lord says is pure religion in James 1:27 'Pure and undefiled religion before God and the Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and to keep oneself unspotted from the world.' and so far away from Nature of God. Jesus in contrast to this came to serve, honored us by bringing us into Himself, lived to make The Father seen and visible to men and gave freely to us the gift of Eternal Life. This is the difference between appearing religious as to benefit yourself as opposed to living in true Righteousness which lives to benefit the other.

### **The Widow's Two Mites**

**Mark 12:41-44** (Luke 21:1-4)

'Now Jesus sat opposite the treasury and saw how the people put money into the treasury. And many who were rich put in much. Then one poor widow came and threw in two mites, which make a quadrans. So He called His disciples to Himself and said to them, "Assuredly, I say to you that this poor widow has put in more than all those who have given to the treasury; for they all put in out of their abundance, but she out of her poverty put in all that she had, her whole livelihood.'"

**-Trust**

The widow when she gave all she had to live on was demonstrating a level of trust in God that far eclipsed the token offerings of the rich. It is this kind of trust that Jesus is looking for from all of us. He isn't telling us that we have to be poor in order to please Him but we need to trust Him with everything we have in order for Him to be Lord over our lives and so that we can be supplied with all that we need from His Inexhaustible Supply (Philippians 4:10-13).



# Mark: Week Eight

## Session One

### Tribulation and Betrayal

We begin with the final week of this school with Jesus starting to explain to the disciples what His first coming will actually set up for the days ahead and the dynamics and tribulation that will proceed His Return. It's important to reiterate that the days are not only planned but necessary. When God revealed His Standards of Justice (Exodus 21:24) and that the punishment is equal to the transgression, we see the days of the people of the Earth being under His Wrath and Judgments during the tribulation through a different lens. Jesus has provided the way for us to come through these things under His Mercy and Grace in His Death and Resurrection, but we see the troubles ahead from a posture of faith and not in fear knowing that Jesus is Just and He Is Good.

What an amazing passage of Scripture we are going to look in this session. It starts with tribulations and trials, moves onto the plot to kill Jesus, an extravagant act of worship, betrayal and dinner and ends with the arrest of Jesus. It really does roll out like an action movie with so many details and events being recorded by Mark in such a small passage of Scripture, but it does give you feeling of the urgency of the hour that Jesus is walking through towards His Mission being fulfilled.

#### Jesus Prophecies The Destruction of The Temple

**Mark 13:1-2** (Matthew 24:1-2, Luke 21:5-6)

'Then as He went out of the temple, one of His disciples said to Him, "Teacher, see what manner of stones and what buildings are here!" And Jesus answered and said to him, "Do you see these great buildings? Not one stone shall be left upon another, that shall not be thrown down."'

#### The Signs of The Times and The End of The Age

**Mark 13:3-13** (Matthew 24:3-14, Luke 21:7-19)

'Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives opposite the temple, Peter, James, John, and Andrew asked Him privately, "Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign when all these things will be fulfilled?" And Jesus, answering them, began to say: "Take heed that no one deceives you. For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am He,' and will deceive many. But when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be troubled; for such things must happen, but the end is not yet. For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be earthquakes in various places, and there will be famines and troubles. These are the beginnings of sorrows. But watch out for yourselves, for they will

deliver you up to councils, and you will be beaten in the synagogues. You will be brought before rulers and kings for My sake, for a testimony to them. And the gospel must first be preached to all the nations. But when they arrest you and deliver you up, do not worry beforehand, or premeditate what you will speak. But whatever is given you in that hour, speak that; for it is not you who speak, but the Holy Spirit. Now brother will betray brother to death, and a father his child; and children will rise up against parents and cause them to be put to death. And you will be hated by all for My name's sake. But he who endures to the end shall be saved.'"

### **-The Beginning of Sorrows**

We all know that throughout human history we have had seasons of war, disease, natural disasters and persecution so this isn't unfamiliar territory for humanity. But Jesus uses a very specific term to describe not only the nature of these conflicts and disasters but it also gives us a pattern to follow and understand as He calls this the beginning of sorrows or Labor pains. These events will not only increase in frequency but will also increase in intensity, just like contractions during birth, as we are moving closer to His Return. We will see the signposts become greater and more destructive as well as happening in quicker succession in the days ahead.

### **-Being Led By The Spirit**

Jesus gives a promise in the midst of all of these dynamics and troubles as He says "But when they arrest you and deliver you up, do not worry beforehand, or premeditate what you will speak. But whatever is given you in that hour, speak that; for it is not you who speak, but the Holy Spirit." We see this demonstrated in Acts 4:8 'Then Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, said to them, "Rulers of the people and elders of Israel:' when Peter is brought before the Sanhedrin to give an account and Holy Spirit fills Him to answer these accusations. Even in the midst of these trials and persecutions that are coming to the Earth He will be with us and lead us at all times with His Spirit through every situation we will face.

## **The Great Tribulation**

### **Mark 13:14-23 (Matthew 24:15-28, Luke 21:20-24)**

"'So when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not" (let the reader understand), "then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. Let him who is on the housetop not go down into the house, nor enter to take anything out of his house. And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! And pray that your flight may not be in winter. For in those days there will be tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the creation which God created until this time, nor ever shall be. And unless the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect's sake, whom He chose, He shortened the days. Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or, 'Look, He is there!' do not believe it. For false Christs and false prophets will rise and show signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. But take heed; see, I have told you all things beforehand.'

### **-No Flesh Would Be Saved**

This statement made by Jesus is actually quite startling when you begin to really examine it. That it is because of His Elect that The Father has shortened the time period of the tribulation because if He didn't, no flesh would be saved. The conditions of the tribulation aren't just some random hardships or trouble, but will be a time of conflict, distress and violence like the Earth has never seen. This will far eclipse all of the wars, disease and death that our history has seen and it is His mercy being extended because of the elect in the Earth that will make a way out for those who love Him.

### **-False christs and False prophets**

We have seen false christs and prophets throughout the past two thousand years gather people around themselves and deceive people through charisma and charm. But during the tribulation there will be many appearing during this period who will be working signs and wonders that will be convincing to the point of even the elect becoming deceived if they are not vigilant. This will be genuine displays of demonic power and signs that won't just be parlor tricks or subtle arguments. The Lord is giving us a road map of the days ahead so that His People will not fall away but endure to the end as overcomers.

## **The Coming of The Son of Man**

**Mark 13:24-27** (Matthew 24:29-31, Luke 21:25-28)

“But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars of heaven will fall, and the powers in the heavens will be shaken. Then they will see the Son of Man coming in the clouds with great power and glory. And then He will send His angels, and gather together His elect from the four winds, from the farthest part of earth to the farthest part of heaven.”

## **The Parable of The Fig Tree**

**Mark 13:28-31** (Matthew 24: 32-35, Luke 21:29-33)

“Now learn this parable from the fig tree: When its branch has already become tender, and puts forth leaves, you know that summer is near. So you also, when you see these things happening, know that it is near—at the doors! Assuredly, I say to you, this generation will by no means pass away till all these things take place. Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will by no means pass away.”

### **-The Generation of His Return**

Once again Jesus is using the natural to teach about the spiritual (1 Corinthians 15:46) as He is likening the signs of the generation of His Return to the same way a fig tree becomes tender and in leaf before it produces fruit. These signs are the evidence that the harvesting of the earth is soon at hand in the same way that when the fig tree produces leaves, it means the fruit is not far away. This is also in reference to the nation of Israel (fig trees are symbolic of Israel) that in this particular season Israel will become tender towards receiving Jesus as Messiah as a people and with that, be included in the great harvest to come.

## No One Knows The Day or Hour

**Mark 13:32-37** (Matthew 24:36-44, Luke 21:34-36)

“But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father. Take heed, watch and pray; for you do not know when the time is. It is like a man going to a far country, who left his house and gave authority to his servants, and to each his work, and commanded the doorkeeper to watch. Watch therefore, for you do not know when the master of the house is coming—in the evening, at midnight, at the crowing of the rooster, or in the morning—lest, coming suddenly, he find you sleeping. And what I say to you, I say to all: Watch!”

## The Plot To Kill Jesus

**Mark 14:1-2** (Matthew 26:1-5, Luke 22:1-2, John 11:45-53)

‘After two days it was the Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread. And the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might take Him by trickery and put Him to death. But they said, “Not during the feast, lest there be an uproar of the people.”’

## The Anointing at Bethany

**Mark 14:3-9** (Matthew 26:6-13, John 12:1-8)

‘And being in Bethany at the house of Simon the leper, as He sat at the table, a woman came having an alabaster flask of very costly oil of spikenard. Then she broke the flask and poured it on His head. But there were some who were indignant among themselves, and said, “Why was this fragrant oil wasted? For it might have been sold for more than three hundred denarii and given to the poor.” And they criticized her sharply. But Jesus said, “Let her alone. Why do you trouble her? She has done a good work for Me. For you have the poor with you always, and whenever you wish you may do them good; but Me you do not have always. She has done what she could. She has come beforehand to anoint My body for burial. Assuredly, I say to you, wherever this gospel is preached in the whole world, what this woman has done will also be told as a memorial to her.”’

## -Mary

The spikenard that Mary poured out on the feet of Jesus was costly and extravagant but the real extravagance was the love that Mary was expressing towards Jesus. It says of Mary in Luke 7:47  
“Therefore I say to you, her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much. But to whom little is forgiven, the same loves little.” She knew of the extravagant forgiveness she had received from Jesus and it was this love shown to her that fueled her love towards Him. It is knowing His Love for us that makes possible for us to love Him as He loved us first and we are responding to that love in expressing it back to Him just like Mary. She also had the honor of anointing Jesus for burial through her worship towards Him and it would have been that same fragrance of affection that remained on Him up until His Crucifixion.

## **Judas Agrees to Betray Jesus**

**Mark 14:10-11** (Matthew 26:14-16, Luke 22:3-6)

'Then Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went to the chief priests to betray Him to them. And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. So he sought how he might conveniently betray Him.'

## **Jesus Celebrates The Passover With His Disciples**

**Mark 14:12-21** (Matthew 26:17-25, Luke 22:7-13, John 13:21-30)

'Now on the first day of Unleavened Bread, when they killed the Passover lamb, His disciples said to Him, "Where do You want us to go and prepare, that You may eat the Passover?" And He sent out two of His disciples and said to them, "Go into the city, and a man will meet you carrying a pitcher of water; follow him. Wherever he goes in, say to the master of the house, 'The Teacher says, "Where is the guest room in which I may eat the Passover with My disciples?"'" Then he will show you a large upper room, furnished and prepared; there make ready for us." So His disciples went out, and came into the city, and found it just as He had said to them; and they prepared the Passover. In the evening He came with the twelve. Now as they sat and ate, Jesus said, "Assuredly, I say to you, one of you who eats with Me will betray Me." And they began to be sorrowful, and to say to Him one by one, "Is it I?" And another said, "Is it I? He answered and said to them, "It is one of the twelve, who dips with Me in the dish. The Son of Man indeed goes just as it is written of Him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been good for that man if he had never been born.'"

## **-Jesus Sets The Timeline**

The Chief Priests and the Scribes didn't want Jesus to be taken during the feast (Mark 14:1-2) as this would have caused an uproar and made it even more difficult to carry out their plans. Judas was also waiting for an opportune time (Mark 14:11) to deliver Him over to them. So then who sets the timeline for Jesus to be handed over at Passover? Jesus Himself sets the timeline in motion in Matthew 26:25 'Then Judas, who was betraying Him, answered and said, "Rabbi, is it I?" He said to him, "You have said it.'" This forces his hand to go and betray Him that night as it isn't the plots and plans of men that is setting the stage for the Atoning Work of The Lamb, it is The Very Will of The Father from before time began that is causing these events to unfold.

## **Jesus Institutes The Lord's Supper**

**Mark 14:22-26** (Matthew 26:26-29, Luke 22:14-23)

'And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, blessed and broke it, and gave it to them and said, "Take, eat; this is My body." Then He took the cup, and when He had given thanks He gave it to them, and they all drank from it. And He said to them, "This is My blood of the new covenant, which is shed for many. Assuredly, I say to you, I will no longer drink of the fruit of the vine until that day when I drink it new in the kingdom of God." And when they had sung a hymn, they went out to the Mount of Olives.'

### **-Communion**

The Apostle Paul gives us some great insight into the purpose of communion in 1 Corinthians 11:23-26 'For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread; and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.' As we partake in communion not only are we receiving of the life and power of Christ but we are also prophesying to the day of His Return where all things will be restored and brought under Him because of The Blood that was shed and His Body that was broken on the cross for our redemption and salvation.

### **-Hymn**

This is quite a radical thought when you really think about it. Jesus was a worshipper and sung to The Father and most likely not just this one time on Passover but as a lifestyle of love and adoration towards His Father. It was actually tradition that at the end of the Passover meal that the Hallel (Psalm 116-118) would be sung and these were the very Psalms that Jesus would have lifted up before The Father as He was about to walk into His betrayal. Worship isn't just for when life is going well, it is to be a source of life and intimacy for believers in every circumstance and season .

## **Jesus Prophecies Peter's Denial**

**Mark 14:27-31** (Matthew 26:31-35, Luke 22:31-34, John 13:36-38)

'Then Jesus said to them, "All of you will be made to stumble because of Me this night for it is written: 'I will strike the Shepherd, And the sheep will be scattered.' But after I have been raised, I will go before you to Galilee." Peter said to Him, "Even if all are made to stumble, yet I will not be." Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you that today, even this night, before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times." But he spoke more vehemently, "If I have to die with You, I will not deny You!" And they all said likewise.'

### **-After I Have Been Raised**

Even in this midst of betrayal and knowing that His Disciples who have been by His side for over three years will all scatter and leave Him alone, Jesus is still giving them instruction on where He will meet with them to restore and lead them. The plan hasn't changed for Him to die and resurrect and fulfill the mission that The Father has given Him. Towards the disciples in this moment Jesus is showing us what great mercy and love He has for us even in our weaknesses and inability to stay the course at times and that He is willing to meet us where we are at.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Zechariah 13:7 "'Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, against the Man who is My Companion," says the LORD of hosts. "Strike the Shepherd, and the sheep will be scattered; then I will turn My hand against the little ones.'

## Prayer in Gethsemane

**Mark 14:32-42** (Matthew 26:36-46, Luke 22:39-46)

'Then they came to a place which was named Gethsemane; and He said to His disciples, "Sit here while I pray." And He took Peter, James, and John with Him, and He began to be troubled and deeply distressed. Then He said to them, "My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even to death. Stay here and watch." He went a little farther, and fell on the ground, and prayed that if it were possible, the hour might pass from Him. And He said, "Abba, Father, all things are possible for You. Take this cup away from Me; nevertheless, not what I will, but what You will." Then He came and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, "Simon, are you sleeping? Could you not watch one hour? Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak." Again He went away and prayed, and spoke the same words. And when He returned, He found them asleep again, for their eyes were heavy; and they did not know what to answer Him. Then He came the third time and said to them, "Are you still sleeping and resting? It is enough! The hour has come; behold, the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise, let us be going. See, My betrayer is at hand.'"

### -The First Place The Blood Was Shed

Everywhere blood was shed from the garden onwards a specific facet of the fall was being atoned for and when you number all the places that Jesus shed blood you end up with the number of completion, seven. Here in the garden it was a provision for the will and emotions of man for be made whole. This is written in:

**Luke 22:41-44**

'And He was withdrawn from them about a stone's throw, and He knelt down and prayed, saying, "Father, if it is Your will, take this cup away from Me; nevertheless not My will, but Yours, be done." Then an angel appeared to Him from heaven, strengthening Him. And being in agony, He prayed more earnestly. Then His sweat became like great drops of blood falling down to the ground.'

So we see that during the intercession of Jesus is focus on His will being laid down and being agony of soul (emotions) that His Blood begins to be shed for our will and emotions to be made whole.

## Betrayal and Arrest In The Garden

**Mark 14:43-50** (Matthew 26:47-56, Luke 22:47-53, John 18:1-11)

'And immediately, while He was still speaking, Judas, one of the twelve, with a great multitude with swords and clubs, came from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders. Now His betrayer had given them a signal, saying, "Whomever I kiss, He is the One; seize Him and lead Him away safely." As soon as he had come, immediately he went up to Him and said to Him, "Rabbi, Rabbi!" and kissed Him. Then they laid their hands on Him and took Him. And one of those who stood by drew his sword and struck the servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear. Then Jesus answered and said to them, "Have you come out, as against a robber, with swords and clubs to take Me? I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and you did not seize Me. But the Scriptures must be fulfilled." Then they all forsook Him and fled.'

### **-Malchus**

We know from The Gospel of John that the man who's ear was cut off was called Malchus and he was actually a servant of the high priest who had come with the arresting party to capture Jesus. Peter's natural zeal and tendency to put his foot in it is on full display as he hacks at Malchus head in defense of Jesus. Now Jesus does what only He can do in these kinds of moments and heals the mans ear (Luke 22:51) and what we might not realize is that if Jesus didn't heal him Peter would have also been arrested and most likely crucified alongside of Jesus. There is always a multifaceted wisdom (Ephesians 3:10) on display in the miracles and purposes of Jesus.

### **Young Man Flees Naked**

#### **Mark 14:51-52**

'Now a certain young man followed Him, having a linen cloth thrown around his naked body. And the young men laid hold of him, and he left the linen cloth and fled from them naked.'

### **-Mark**

Now this is just early church tradition as we don't have it recorded in The Scriptures, but the early church believe that this young man who fled naked was actually the writer himself, Mark. They also held that the house where the last supper was held was actually Mark's family home and that is why he ran to the garden as Judas most likely went to the house first before leading them to spot that Jesus has taken the disciples often at the Mount of Olives. He is the only one to record this event as maybe a subtle reference to himself being there without wanting to name himself as the only recorded New Testament streaker.

### **Jesus Faces The Sanhedrin**

#### **Mark 14:53-65** (Matthew 26:57-68, Luke 22:66-71, John 18:12-14)

'And they led Jesus away to the high priest; and with him were assembled all the chief priests, the elders, and the scribes. But Peter followed Him at a distance, right into the courtyard of the high priest. And he sat with the servants and warmed himself at the fire. Now the chief priests and all the council sought testimony against Jesus to put Him to death, but found none. For many bore false witness against Him, but their testimonies did not agree. Then some rose up and bore false witness against Him, saying, "We heard Him say, 'I will destroy this temple made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands.'" But not even then did their testimony agree. And the high priest stood up in the midst and asked Jesus, saying, "Do You answer nothing? What is it these men testify against You?" But He kept silent and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked Him, saying to Him, "Are You the Christ, the Son of the Blessed?" Jesus said, "I am. And you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming with the clouds of heaven." Then the high priest tore his clothes and said, "What further need do we have of witnesses? You have heard the blasphemy! What do you think?" And they all condemned Him to be deserving of death. Then some began to spit on Him, and to blindfold Him, and to beat Him, and to say to Him, "Prophecy!" And the officers struck Him with the palms of their hands.'



### **-Illegal Trial**

The trial that was convened to execute Jesus was in fact Illegal. There are lots of things that had to be followed in Jewish customs when it came to legal trials and this proceeding violates quite a few of the rules: The prisoner was to be bound after he had been pronounced guilty not before, there could be no legal transactions done at night, it could not be on a feast day, there could be no false witnesses and the one being tried couldn't incriminate himself by his own witness. Not to mention that it was illegal for the High Priest to tear his garments (Leviticus 21:10). But once again the timeline of these events are not subject to the plans of men but in fact are being orchestrated to fulfill the Timeline and Scriptures of God.

### **-The Second Place The Blood Was Shed**

Now as the soldiers were beating and striking Jesus, they mocked Him and asked Him to prophesy as to who struck Him. That's a little odd unless you see the provision that is being made here in Jesus shed blood. As He was being struck they were also plucking out His beard (Isaiah 50:6) which is symbolic of the prophetic utterance gifts, as in the oil that ran down Aaron's beard (Psalm 133:2) as he was Moses' prophetic mouthpiece (Exodus 7:1). Jesus is making a way for all the gifts of the spirit to be provided for through this beating and shedding of His Blood and for the words of The Spirit to be released in prophetic ministry amongst His People.

### **Peter's Denial**

**Mark 14:66-72** (Matthew 26:69-75, Luke 22:54-62, John 18:15-18, 18:25-27)

'Now as Peter was below in the courtyard, one of the servant girls of the high priest came. And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked at him and said, "You also were with Jesus of Nazareth." But he denied it, saying, "I neither know nor understand what you are saying." And he went out on the porch, and a rooster crowed. And the servant girl saw him again, and began to say to those who stood by, "This is one of them." But he denied it again. And a little later those who stood by said to Peter again, "Surely you are one of them; for you are a Galilean, and your speech shows it." Then he began to curse and swear, "I do not know this Man of whom you speak!" A second time the rooster crowed. Then Peter called to mind the word that Jesus had said to him, "Before the rooster crows twice, you will deny Me three times." And when he thought about it, he wept.'



# Mark: Week Eight

## Session Two

### Crucifixion and Ascension

Jesus Illegal trial continues as He is brought before Pilate by the chief priests, elders and scribes to be accused in the hopes that Rome will execute Jesus and end what they think is a blasphemous rebellion. Not knowing that when one of their own prophesied that it was better that Jesus would die for the nation of Israel than all should perish (John 11:49-52) that it wouldn't be because He was starting a rebellion that they would be punished for, but it was because this was the exact Purposes and Plan of The Father from before time began (Revelation 13:8). Jesus isn't being moved along by mans purpose, but in every little detail He is Fulfilling the exact purpose He was Born for.

In this session we are going to continuing to unpack the seven places that the blood was shed as Jesus continues to make provision for every place that sin has touched mankind, as well as His Death and Resurrection, the unique day that He was Raised, His own 'It is Written' that He taught with the two unnamed disciples on the road to Emmaus and then it all comes to a close in His Ascension back to The Father.

#### Jesus Faces Pilate

**Mark 15:1-5** (Matthew 27:1-2, 27:11-14, Luke 23:1-5, John 18:28-38)

'Immediately, in the morning, the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes and the whole council; and they bound Jesus, led Him away, and delivered Him to Pilate. Then Pilate asked Him, "Are You the King of the Jews?" He answered and said to him, "It is as you say." And the chief priests accused Him of many things, but He answered nothing. Then Pilate asked Him again, saying, "Do You answer nothing? See how many things they testify against You!" But Jesus still answered nothing, so that Pilate marveled.'

#### -Pilate

Pilate was actually the personal representative of Caesar in the region and was put in place to keep the region under control and make sure that Roman interests were kept safe. Being brought before him and being asked if He was The King of The Jews would potentially position Jesus to be seen as a political threat as the only King was Caesar according to Rome. Without hesitation Jesus responds yes but Pilate doesn't respond like you would think. He is more interested in Jesus lack of response to the chief priests than he is seeing Jesus as a threat to Rome.

## **Taking The Place of Barabbas**

**Mark 15:6-15** (Matthew 27:15-26, Luke 23:17-25, John 18:39-19:16)

'Now at the feast he was accustomed to releasing one prisoner to them, whomever they requested. And there was one named Barabbas, who was chained with his fellow rebels; they had committed murder in the rebellion. Then the multitude, crying aloud, began to ask him to do just as he had always done for them. But Pilate answered them, saying, "Do you want me to release to you the King of the Jews?" For he knew that the chief priests had handed Him over because of envy. But the chief priests stirred up the crowd, so that he should rather release Barabbas to them. Pilate answered and said to them again, "What then do you want me to do with Him whom you call the King of the Jews?" So they cried out again, "Crucify Him!" Then Pilate said to them, "Why, what evil has He done?" But they cried out all the more, "Crucify Him!" So Pilate, wanting to gratify the crowd, released Barabbas to them; and he delivered Jesus, after he had scourged Him, to be crucified.'

### **-Barabbas**

Now Barabbas was rightfully convicted and guilty of what he was charged with, there is no two ways about it. He was tried legally and was sentenced to death. But with him becoming freed at the expense of Jesus life, shows us the need for a substitute who can take the sentence over us upon Himself and therefore we can receive true freedom even though every charge against us was true and just. Interesting to note that scholars believe that Barabbas first name was also Jesus and with that it shows us that the carnal nature will choose the Jesus that looks the most like us so that we don't have to confront our need for the True Jesus.

### **-The Third Place The Blood Was Shed**

Now this would be the most well understood place that the blood was shed in regards to a specific provision being made. This is written in:

**Isaiah 53:5**

'But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and by His stripes we are healed.'

**Psalms 129:3**

""The plowers plowed on my back; they made their furrows long.""

So we see that during the scourging of Jesus back, The Blood that was being shed was making provision for physical healing in our bodies.

## **The Soldiers Mock Jesus**

**Mark 15:16-20** (Matthew 27:27-31)

'Then the soldiers led Him away into the hall called Praetorium, and they called together the whole garrison. And they clothed Him with purple; and they twisted a crown of thorns, put it on His head, and began to salute Him, "Hail, King of the Jews!" Then they struck Him on the head with a reed and spat on Him; and bowing the knee, they worshiped Him. And when they had mocked Him, they took the purple off Him, put His own clothes on Him, and led Him out to crucify Him.'

### **-The Fourth Place The Blood Was Shed**

The Crown of Thorns that was placed on Jesus head would have been driven deep into His head by the Roman soldiers forcing it upon Him as to mock Him. This was yet another provision being made through the Blood of Jesus, as the thorns had within them a mild poison that would have irritated the wound as it sat upon Jesus head. This provision is for the healing of our thought life and being freed from demonic torments as written in:

#### **Isaiah 53:5**

'But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and by His stripes we are healed.'

Our Shalom came from His chastisement and when they placed the crown upon His Head that provision released the shalom of God for our thought life made a way for us to have the mind of Christ (1 Corinthians 2:16).

### **The King On A Cross**

#### **Mark 15:21-32** (Matthew 27:32-44, Luke 22:36-43, John 19:17-27)

'Then they compelled a certain man, Simon a Cyrenian, the father of Alexander and Rufus, as he was coming out of the country and passing by, to bear His cross. And they brought Him to the place Golgotha, which is translated, Place of a Skull. Then they gave Him wine mingled with myrrh to drink, but He did not take it. And when they crucified Him, they divided His garments, casting lots for them to determine what every man should take. Now it was the third hour, and they crucified Him. And the inscription of His accusation was written above: THE KING OF THE JEWS. With Him they also crucified two robbers, one on His right and the other on His left. So the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "And He was numbered with the transgressors." And those who passed by blasphemed Him, wagging their heads and saying, "Aha! You who destroy the temple and build it in three days, save Yourself, and come down from the cross!" Likewise the chief priests also, mocking among themselves with the scribes, said, "He saved others; Himself He cannot save. Let the Christ, the King of Israel, descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe." Even those who were crucified with Him reviled Him.'

### **-The Fifth Place The Blood Was Shed**

Now we come to the next place the blood was shed, the feet. Jesus's feet were pierced so that He would stay on the cross but there was also a provision being made by those nails. This was so we could walk and have fellowship with The Lord. As it is written:

#### **1 John 1:6-7**

'If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth. But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.'

So in order to have fellowship and walk with Him, we need to have been cleansed from darkness through the blood of Jesus.

### **-The Sixth Place The Blood Was Shed**

The next place The Blood was shed was His Hands. This was a provision for us to be able have clean hands and that the work of our hands would be acceptable before Him. This is written in:

#### **Psalm 24:3-5**

'Who may ascend into the hill of the LORD? Or who may stand in His holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who has not lifted up his soul to an idol, nor sworn deceitfully. He shall receive blessing from the LORD, and righteousness from the God of his salvation.'

So know because of our clean hands and pure hearts we can approach His Throne and bring to Him the works of our hands in partnership with Him as we take The Gospel into the Earth.

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Isaiah 53:12 'Therefore I will divide Him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong, because He poured out His soul unto death, and He was numbered with the transgressors, and He bore the sin of many, and made intercession for the transgressors.'

### **Jesus Dies On The Cross**

#### **Mark 15:33-41** (Matthew 27:45-56, Luke 23:44-49, John 19:26-30)

'Now when the sixth hour had come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice, saying, "Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?" which is translated, "My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?" Some of those who stood by, when they heard that, said, "Look, He is calling for Elijah!" Then someone ran and filled a sponge full of sour wine, put it on a reed, and offered it to Him to drink, saying, "Let Him alone; let us see if Elijah will come to take Him down." And Jesus cried out with a loud voice, and breathed His last. Then the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom. So when the centurion, who stood opposite Him, saw that He cried out like this and breathed His last, he said, "Truly this Man was the Son of God!" There were also women looking on from afar, among whom were Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James the Less and of Joses, and Salome, who also followed Him and ministered to Him when He was in Galilee, and many other women who came up with Him to Jerusalem.'

### **-The Seventh Place The Blood Was Shed**

The seventh place that The Blood was shed was Jesus side after He has breathed His last, it isn't written here in Mark but it is recorded in:

#### **John 19:34**

'But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out.'

The provision made by His Blood in this final moment was for us to become joint heirs as it is written:

#### **Romans 8:16-17**

'The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, and if children, then heirs—heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.'

It was also a provision made when the soldier pierced the side of Jesus (The Last Adam) after he had fallen asleep, for His Bride (The Last Eve..thats you!) to brought forth from His Side!

### **Genesis 2:21-22**

'And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall on Adam, and he slept; and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh in its place. Then the rib which the LORD God had taken from man He made into a woman, and He brought her to the man.'

### **-Prophecy Fulfilled**

Psalms 22:1 'To the Chief Musician. Set to "The Deer of the Dawn." A Psalm of David. My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me? Why are You so far from helping Me, And from the words of My groaning?'

### **Jesus Buried in Joseph's Tomb**

**Mark 15:42-47** (Matthew 27:57-61, Luke 23:50-56, John 19:38-42)

'Now when evening had come, because it was the Preparation Day, that is, the day before the Sabbath, Joseph of Arimathea, a prominent council member, who was himself waiting for the kingdom of God, coming and taking courage, went in to Pilate and asked for the body of Jesus. Pilate marveled that He was already dead; and summoning the centurion, he asked him if He had been dead for some time. So when he found out from the centurion, he granted the body to Joseph. Then he bought fine linen, took Him down, and wrapped Him in the linen. And he laid Him in a tomb which had been hewn out of the rock, and rolled a stone against the door of the tomb. And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joseph observed where He was laid.'

### **-Joseph of Arimathea**

Now Joseph is quite an interesting character here at this point in the proceedings. He was actually in hiding at this point as he had become a follower of Jesus (John 19:38) but he was a man of high enough social standing that he was able to approach Pilate and ask for the body with no issues. According to Roman Law you had to be a next of kin to receive the body, so it is interesting to note that he may have been a relative of Jesus, he then took Jesus and placed him in his own family tomb (another hint maybe?).

### **-Prophecy fulfilled**

Isaiah 53:9 'And they made His grave with the wicked—But with the rich at His death, Because He had done no violence, nor was any deceit in His mouth.'

### **He Is Risen**

**Mark 16:1-8** (Matthew 28:1-8, Luke 24:1-12, John 20:1-10)

'Now when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome bought spices, that they might come and anoint Him. Very early in the morning, on the first day of the week, they came to the tomb when the sun had risen. And they said among themselves, "Who will roll away the stone from the door of the tomb for us?" But when they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away—for it was very large. And entering the tomb, they saw a young man clothed in a long

white robe sitting on the right side; and they were alarmed. But he said to them, "Do not be alarmed. You seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified. He is risen! He is not here. See the place where they laid Him. But go, tell His disciples—and Peter—that He is going before you into Galilee; there you will see Him, as He said to you." So they went out quickly and fled from the tomb, for they trembled and were amazed. And they said nothing to anyone, for they were afraid.'

### **-The First Day**

Now if you follow the Jewish calendar you will find that the very day Jesus Resurrected was the seventeenth day of the seventh month. Now that day is very significant if you know your Bible dates and timelines as this was in fact the very day that flood finished (Genesis 8:4) and ushered in the Earth's new beginning after having been cleansed from the unrighteousness of mankind. Here we have Jesus emerging as the Greater Ark having done away with the sins of the mankind and bringing us into a new beginning!

### **-Into Galilee**

Jesus frequently and consistently told His Disciples that He would be killed and three days later be raised up and He even told them at the Lords Supper that He would go before them into Galilee (Matthew 26:32). So now He has Resurrected He is going to fulfill what He said by meeting them in Galilee and here we have the angel (the young man) repeating the very words of Jesus to the two Marys and Salome with an additional instruction to tell the disciples and Peter that Jesus will go before them and meet them in Galilee. Jesus will always fulfill what He said and we need to build our lives on that fact (Isaiah 55:11).

### **Mark Magdalene Sees The Risen Lord**

#### **Mark 16:9-11**

'Now when He rose early on the first day of the week, He appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom He had cast seven demons. She went and told those who had been with Him, as they mourned and wept. And when they heard that He was alive and had been seen by her, they did not believe.'

### **Jesus Appears To Two Disciples**

#### **Mark 16:12-13** (Luke 24:13-35)

'After that, He appeared in another form to two of them as they walked and went into the country. And they went and told it to the rest, but they did not believe them either.'

### **-Jesus Teaches 'It Is Written'**

Where Mark records this interaction in just two verses, this is actually a very famous passage of Scripture that is found in Luke 24:13-36 and is better known as the road to Emmaus. Jesus actually walks with the two unnamed disciples in a form they do not recognize and begin to unveil to them the entire plan of redemption beginning in the Books of Moses all the way through to the Prophets showing them why The Christ had to suffer and all the Scriptures concerning Him. It is so important that we let The Holy Spirit guide us into all truth in The Word as He delights in taking from what is Jesus's and making it available to us and we need Him to unveil the Truth in The Word in the same way that Jesus did for those two disciples.



## The Great Commission

**Mark 16:14-18** (Matthew 28:16-20, Luke 24:44-49)

'Later He appeared to the eleven as they sat at the table; and He rebuked their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they did not believe those who had seen Him after He had risen. And He said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature. He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out demons; they will speak with new tongues; they will take up serpents; and if they drink anything deadly, it will by no means hurt them; they will lay hands on the sick, and they will recover.'"

### -The Great Commission

This is what everything that Jesus has been teaching the disciples in their three and a half years walking together has been leading to. The moment when He would commission them (and in turn us) to carry and preach the Gospel to the very end of the earth in word and power but not before He has rebuked their hard hearts and unbelief at the reports of His Resurrection. This mandate is the most important thing that we as Christians have a responsibility to fulfill and live out as it is the message of salvation for all who will believe and be baptized and the only way that the world will know is if we tell them (Romans 10:14)

### -The Signs of a Believer

Jesus has also given us power and sign to demonstrate the Gospel is the same way that we He did and they're very well known to those in charismatic circles but they are so vital to the mission of The Church that is worth unpacking. First of all believers will cast out demons, this is why we need to get back to the truth of deliverance as it is then first evidence of a believer as well as it needed now more than ever. Then we have the gift of tongues being in operation in the life of a believer, which if you understand the law of first mention shows that this gift is available to every believer as this instruction proceeds 1 Corinthians 12:1-11. Then we have taking up serpents, which is not about snake handling as this is directed to having authority over the demonic realm. The drinking of deadly poison and finally laying hands on the sick and having them recover. These are the signs that The Lord has given us to authenticate The Gospel Message that we are called to proclaim as This Gospel is not a theory but is the in-breaking reality of God's Rule and Reign being expressed into the Earth through His Church.

## Jesus Ascends

**Mark 16:19-20** (Luke 24:50-53)

'So then, after the Lord had spoken to them, He was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God. And they went out and preached everywhere, the Lord **working with them** and confirming the word through the accompanying signs. Amen.'

**συνεργέω**

Strong's G4903

synergéō, soon-erg-eh'-o; from G4904; to be a fellow-worker, i.e. co-operate:—help (work) with, work(-er) together.

-to work together, help in work, be partner in labour  
-to put forth power together with and thereby to assist

### **-Co-Labouring**

There is a very significant key given to us here in this particular verse when it comes to the working of miracles and signs following believers. First of all the Lord confirmed His Message with miracles and signs and not opinions. God will always anoint and move upon the truth of His Word (Genesis 1:2) being proclaimed. But there is also a cooperative work that The Lord is seeking from us. 'The Lord working with them' has the Greek word where we get the word synergy from within it, to show us that we have a place of partnership with Holy Spirit as we learn to work in synergy with His Leadings to see the miraculous come forth in power to accompany The Word.